PUBLIC LIBRARY
HAMILTON

HACKNEY
CENTRAL LIBRARY

MSC
ORWAY A.H
IGWAYS AND BY-
AYS IN YORKSHIRE

42·74
11024 D

LONDON BOROUGH OF LEWISHAM
LIBRARY SERVICE

Author

Title

BOOK STORE

Books or discs must be returned on or before the last date stamped on label or on card in book pocket. Books or discs can be renewed by telephone, letter or personal call unless required by another reader. After library hours use the Ansafone Service (01-698 7347). For hours of opening and charges see notices at the above branch, but note that all lending departments close at 1 pm on Wednesday and all libraries are closed on Sundays, Good Friday, Christmas Day, Bank Holidays and Saturdays prior to Bank Holidays

METROPOLITAN
SPECIAL COLLECTION

HIGHWAYS AND BYWAYS

IN

YORKSHIRE

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2026

https://archive.org/details/highwaysbywaysin0000unse_l0i2

Whitby Harbour.

942·74

Highways and Byways in Yorkshire

DISCARDED
BY THE
HACKNEY PUBLIC LIBRARIES

BY ARTHUR H. NORWAY

WITH · ILLUSTRATIONS · BY
JOSEPH PENNELL AND
HUGH THOMSON

HACKNEY
PUBLIC
LIBRARIES

London
MACMILLAN AND CO., LIMITED
NEW YORK: THE MACMILLAN COMPANY
1899

All rights reserved

RICHARD CLAY AND SONS, LIMITED,
LONDON AND BUNGAY.

942.74
Class No. ~~B2C~~
Prog. No. 3
Acc. No. 11021
Library

HACKNEY PUBLIC LIBRARIES

CONTENTS

CHAPTER I

THE GREAT NORTH ROAD, BAWTRY, TICKHILL, THRYBERGH . . PAGE 1

CHAPTER II

DONCASTER, PONTEFRACT, AND TOWTON 19

CHAPTER III

HASLEWOOD, TADCASTER, YORK, AND BEVERLEY 45

CHAPTER IV

BEVERLEY, HULL, FLAMBOROUGH, FILEY AND SCARBOROUGH . . 71

CHAPTER V

HELMSLEY, RIEVAULX, BYLAND 94

CHAPTER VI

LASTINGHAM, PICKERING, AND WHITBY 112

CHAPTER VI

PAGE

WHITBY AND THE NORTH-EASTERN COAST 131

CHAPTER VIII

NORTHALLERTON, CATTERICK, GRETA BRIDGE, AND BARNARD CASTLE 155

CHAPTER IX

BARNARD CASTLE, TEESDALE, HIGH FORCE 175

CHAPTER X

RICHMOND AND EASBY 196

CHAPTER XI

SWALEDALE AND THE PASS OF BUTTERTUBS 214

CHAPTER XII

WENSLEYDALE 234

CHAPTER XIII

LEYBURN, MIDDLEHAM, COVERHAM, JERVAUX, AND HACKFALL . 258

CHAPTER XIV

FOUNTAINS ABBEY 275

CHAPTER XV

PAGE
RIPON AND KNARESBOROUGH 295

CHAPTER XVI

WHARFEDALE, BOLTON PRIORY, AND SKIPTON 317

CHAPTER XVII

GORDALE AND INGLEBOROUGH 338

CHAPTER XVIII

KIRKSTALL, WAKEFIELD, AND THE APPROACH TO SHEFFIELD . 359

INDEX 382

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

	PAGE
WHITBY HARBOUR . . . . . *Frontispiece*	
ROCHE ABBEY	12
CONISBORO' CASTLE	17
ROBIN HOOD'S WELL, NEAR DONCASTER	28
PONTEFRACT	34
THE PALACE, BISHOP'S THORPE	45
MICKLEGATE BAR, YORK	52
YORK FROM THE WALL	53
ST. MARY'S ABBEY, YORK	61
BEVERLEY GATE	70
BEVERLEY	73
HULL	77
BRIDLINGTON QUAY	83
SCARBOROUGH	95
RIEVAULX ABBEY	104
BYLAND ABBEY	109
COXWOLD	110
STERNE'S HOUSE, COXWOLD	111
CASTLE HOWARD	119
PICKERING CASTLE	125
CASTLE HOWARD	126

PAGE

GLEN NEAR WHITBY 129

WHITBY 131

WHITBY ABBEY 137

WHITBY HARBOUR 143

THE COAST ROAD TO WHITBY 145

RUNSWICK BAY 147

STAITHES 149

NEAR GUISBOROUGH 150

GUISBOROUGH ABBEY 152

SALTBURN 153

ON THE GRETA 155

BRIDGE ON THE GRETA 162

ROKEBY 165

THE GRETA RIVER 167

EGGLESTON ABBEY 171

EGGLESTON ABBEY FROM THE RIVER 173

BARNARD CASTLE 177

HIGH FORCE 185

ROAD TO RICHMOND 196

RICHMOND CASTLE FROM THE RIVER 197

RICHMOND CASTLE 199

RICHMOND 201

EASBY ABBEY, RICHMOND 205

APPROACH TO RICHMOND 214

MUKER 217

BUTTER-TUBS PASS 221

THE BUTTER-TUBS 223

HARDRAW FORCE 230

WENSLEY 234

ASKRIGG 235

PAGE

ASKRIGG 237

BOLTON CASTLE 241

BOLTON CASTLE 249

WENSLEYDALE 256

WENSLEYDALE 257

MIDDLEHAM CASTLE 260

COVERHAM ABBEY 267

JERVAULX ABBEY 269

FOUNTAINS ABBEY 275

WEST TANFIELD 276

FOUNTAINS HALL 278

FOUNTAINS ABBEY 290

RIPON 299

RIPON CATHEDRAL 301

RIPON CATHEDRAL 303

KNARESBOROUGH 309

KNARESBOROUGH 311

RIPLEY 316

THE WHARFE AT BOLTON ABBEY 317

HARROGATE 318

PASS. BOLTON TO HARROGATE 319

THE VALLEY OF THE WHARFE 322

BOLTON ABBEY 324

BARDEN TOWER 326

THE BRIDGE AT BARDEN 328

THE VALLEY OF THE WHARFE 329

BOLTON ABBEY 332

THE CASTLE, SKIPTON 333

SKIPTON CHURCH 335

KETTLEWELL 337

PAGE

VALLEY OF THE WHARFE 338

THURSFIELD 339

MALHAM COVE 343

NEAR SETTLE 344

SETTLE 345

THE MARKET PLACE, SETTLE 346

CATTERICK FORCE, SETTLE 347

INGLEBOROUGH FROM NEAR SETTLE 351

BRIDGE BY BOLTON IN BOLLAND 357

SAWLEY ABBEY 358

CHAPELTOWN 359

KILDWICK 360

A BLACK COUNTRY ROAD 361

BRADFORD FROM THE LEEDS ROAD 363

IN THE BLACK COUNTRY, LEEDS 365

KIRKSTALL ABBEY 367

WAKEFIELD 369

THE CHAPEL ON THE BRIDGE, WAKEFIELD 371

KIRKLESS HALL 375

SHEFFIELD 379

BRADFORD 381

LIST OF PLATES

THE GREAT NORTH ROAD . . . . . *to face* 2

THE CAVALIERS CANTERED BACK ACROSS THE BRIDGE . ,, 25

ON THE BOWLING GREEN . . . . . ,, 97

THE RETURN FROM HAWKING . . . . . ,, 178

SELECTED A SMALL DRUMMER BOY . . . . . ,, 203

ROBIN HOOD AND LITTLEJOHN . . . . . ,, 284

SAT LAUGHING FOR FULL A QUARTER OF AN HOUR . . ,, 314

OLD NICK CAME UNTO HIM . . . . . ,, 340

HIGHWAYS AND BYWAYS

IN

YORKSHIRE

HACKNEY PUBLIC LIBRARIES

HIGHWAYS AND BYWAYS

IN

YORKSHIRE

CHAPTER I

THE GREAT NORTH ROAD, BAWTRY, TICKHILL, THRYBERGH

"One may call and justify this," says sententious Fuller, "to be the best shire in England;" and he adds, with a quaint reference to Tully's orations, *optima quae longissima*—the best which is the longest. Now while professing every regard for Fuller, whose little quirks are not to be handled by the world's blunt thumb and finger, but should be accepted gratefully as pretty coruscations in a biographical waste which he might have left so arid,—with all gratitude and love, I say, for my old friend and comrade, I protest strenuously against the gauge which he adopts. For does one measure Madonna with a foot rule, or estimate a mighty warrior by inches? Here is a shire which from the first twilight of our stormy history has caught all men's imagination by the strength and vigour of its life, a stage on which the grandest dramas have been played out with pomp and tragedy, a soil which has been drenched through and through by the very noblest blood in England, a sturdy

bulwark thrust well nigh across the whole widtn of the country in the track of Scotch invasion, a land of tradition, of romance, and one withal of beauty so great and varied, so rare a medley of exquisite river valleys falling out of wild moorland hills, of high grassy dales along the wind-swept mountains, and of stern seacoast as can be matched only in one other shire. If life in Yorkshire had been tame throughout all history, if its dalesmen had been peaceful shepherds and its barons ready to give unquestioning loyalty to every king who sat at Westminster, if its townsmen had been placid traders and its great forests had never bred an outlaw,—yet men would have wandered over its mountains and gazed down its valleys with delight for their very beauty. To look on Wharfe stealing beneath Barden Woods, or to watch Swale rushing black and swollen out of the highlands, must have been a pleasure even if those rivers flowed through wildernesses where man had never dwelt. But as it is, the natural charm is stung into enthusiasm by some poignancy of human interest which clings to every mile of the vast area of Yorkshire, making of that county not only an epitome of English history, but more than that, a monument of fierce passions and bloody tragedies, of cruel raids and gallant expeditions, which cries out loudly for our sympathy and interest even in these days of peace. For many a century Yorkshire life was a splendid pageant; and though the banners and the pennants have long since swept away elsewhere, though the dales are silent which used to echo with the clank of spears or harness, and the daws nest freely in the roofless castles of Scrope and Mowbray, or defile the sacred precincts of Fountains and of Rievaulx,—still those who listen rightly may catch some echo of the distant music, clear and ringing through all the generations which have come and gone. A very little fancy will people those valleys once more with the musters of sturdy yeomen who rode to Bannockburn or Flodden, will raise again the banner of the Five Wounds of Christ, or call up the picture of the first messengers spurring into York from the field of

[*To face page* 2.

"*The Great North Road.*"

Marston Moor, where, through the long summer evening, the citizens knelt praying in their churches that they might be spared that terror which was surely falling on them.

Ah, great old days! I shall lose myself in retrospect if I do not check the rush of memories which assails me as I set foot on Yorkshire soil. It was Fuller who misled me; and probably I have said enough to show what it was that distressed me in his ranking this great county by its miles and acres. There was time to make the protest, for I am not in Yorkshire yet, though running fast a-wheel along the last few miles of that highway which goes northwards through Grantham, Stamford, Newark and a dozen other famous towns, and is yet known commonly as the Great North Road. Whether it was great or otherwise is of little moment now, except to cyclists and ragged beggarmen; for they alone out of the whole community travel its deserted ways which were once so full of noisy life, and mark how the ancient wayside inns have lost their occupation and descended into farms or cottages; while as each easy hill surmounted discloses new lengths of the broad old highway running straight and smooth between wide grassy borders, the very spaciousness and emptiness of the road possess a certain dignity and grandeur which are suggestive of long vanished pomps and noble spectacles such as we shall never see again. It was not yonder sleepy farmer jogging home from Doncaster in his gig, that the makers of this highway had in mind; nor was it the herdsman who walks cautiously before his sheep, checking them with his staff in front while his dog brings up all stragglers in the rear. It was for quite other travellers that the width and length of the Great North Road were designed,—for Roman armies marching northwards where their greatest peril always lay, for the progresses of kings bent on hunting in the great forests north of Trent, or called hastily to arms by some revolt of Barons whose power was regal and whose loyalty a phrase, for bands of pilgrims journeying to the shrines of St. John of Beverley or St. Wilfrid of Ripon or to the Roode of

Doncaster "at the brigge end," places so holy that in the old days when faith was living they drew towards them vast numbers of strong men and tender women submitting voluntarily to dangers and privations such as even money would scarce tempt us to undergo. It was for packhorses with their high-piled burdens, for stage wagons like that which Roderick Random chased so many weary miles afoot, agreeing at last to pay the wagon master ten shillings for his passage to London on the understanding that when he was disposed to walk, his friend Strap should get in and ride in his place. It was even more particularly designed for post chaises, such as that in which Mrs. Shandy, Tristram's excellent mother, used to drag her reluctant husband up to London under that queer clause in her marriage settlement; but, most of all, the makers of the road as we now see it had in mind stage coaches, like the "Regent," which worthy old John Barker drove for many a year from the "George and Blue Boar" in Holborn to Grantham within the day, daunted by neither floods nor snow, so long as his team of greys or chestnuts could plunge or stagger through. And if it was for coaches that this great roadway was designed, it was surely in a sense designed for robbers too; or at any rate it served their purpose admirably. In fact the whole North Road had a somewhat unsavoury reputation, and those who travelled by it went in constant peril. "The York coach not forty yards before me," wrote Lady Anne Irwin to her father, the Earl of Carlisle, in April, 1776, "the York coach not forty yards before me was stopped and robbed. I saw the rogues do it, and could expect nothing less myself, having no other guard than Tom Bulfin; but upon seeing him armed, they rid off with such violence, either on purpose or design, they had near thrown Tom from his horse. Thus I fortunately escaped, but they took in another stage coach about a hundred yards behind me and got a good booty,—two watches and above twenty pounds. People have seldom much money going from London, especially those that pay all their debts there"—surely the gentlemen

of the road need not have troubled their heads about this small minority of the population,—"but I was charged with a commission to your lordship . . . and have in bank-bills and money near £160 to pay you." Happy Lady Anne to keep this heavy purse, while lighter ones were being handed out in her very sight! Lucky Tom Bulfin to escape with a shaking! Misfortunate robbers, who gained £20 and missed eight times as much! How our little chances in life go by without our knowing it! Well, let us be grateful that the roads are safe today; for even a cyclist, who, I take it, comes nearer to the *vacuus viator* of an older age than anybody else among us, would hardly like turning out his empty pockets at the bidding of a dirty footpad.

Somewhere on the road, not very far from Bawtry, the Earl of Dumfries was robbed in November 1649. At least he said he was, for the two men whom he accused declared it was the most innocent matter in the world! His lordship with his servant was riding over the corn. They asked him to desist: whereupon the Earl got down and walked away without a word. His servant did the same. The two horses were left straying in the road: and they, good honest men, were taking them, for greater safety, to the pound! I blush for humanity when I add that they were not believed.

But how the North Road is haunted by the phantoms of all successive ages! Deserted, lonely highway! what tragedies has it not witnessed! Even in this blithe summer sunshine, when the scent of the hawthorn is blown across my track from every hedge, when the woodpigeons are calling in the cool woods, and there is movement far and wide over all the face of the level country, I cannot ride along without finding a hundred recollections chase each other through my memory. Was it not upon this highway that the second Richard was hurried secretly down from London after Bolingbroke had stripped him of his crown,—poor, friendless monarch, travelling to an end so doubtful that as he lay in state no more than his face could be

exposed? How often this country must have been ravaged by triumphant men at arms led by Warwick, the great Kingmaker, marching north to Middleham or Raby: or by the fierce Edward, who won his throne at Towton Moor, not twenty miles from here, where the cause of the Red Rose went down in seas of blood and the little River Cock ran crimson underneath the corpses heaped up in the snow! How those who dwelt by the wayside on this road must have known his features, and must have known too his saintly rival, Henry, that gentle kingly man who, as Hall tells us, deemed that by "his trouble and adversitie his synnes were to him forgotten and forgeven," and whom the men of the north country loved with such devotion that they built shrines in his memory and prayed to him as to a saint, long years after he came to his solitary and unhappy end! Why, there is scarce a king in all our history whom this road has not seen riding by amid a gallant company, nor any tragedy which has not sent its fugitives skulking at nightfall along the grass borders in the shadow of the hedge.

But here is Bawtry breaking in upon my gloomy memories, a red-tiled cheerful town, aligning itself along the North Road with a frank admission that it owes not only its birth, but its continued existence to that great highway. I am told that it was once a seat of commerce, catching the stream which from very early times has flowed out of the factory districts of the West Riding towards the shipping ports upon the Humber. It may be so; but I look around at the long empty street, scarce more than a double line of houses following the winding of the highway, and I doubt the magnitude of the commerce. At any rate, Bawtry is nothing now but a resting place for travellers; and for those who come north with the intention of seeing Yorkshire it is the most appropriate of all gateways to the county. For here, in the ancient days of royal progresses, the sheriff and gentlemen of the land of broad acres used to meet their sovereign, greeting him with their loyal salutations on the very border. Many a gallant troop of courtiers rode down this

street, not all of whom, as we may very well surmise, were pleased to see their monarch coming. For strange things went on among the baronage north of Trent. There were those among them who cared little for the authority of any king, and were for shaking off his yoke whenever he showed a tendency to disagree with them, and there were others of less strength whose loyalty was worth no more. So that when these happy meetings occurred between the sovereign and his loving subjects, the old street of Bawtry must have witnessed strange scenes of dissimulation and veiled menace.

But I cannot stand here in the sun speculating upon the precise worth of the loyal professions of men who have been dust for three centuries and more. I have ridden far, and am going into the "Crown," that picturesque old hostelry, for some refreshment, over which the proverbial saying about the town warns me not to hurry, lest I be overtaken by the fate of "the saddler of Bawtry, who was hanged for leaving his liquor." I vow he would have saved his life had he been a cyclist, and ridden twenty miles along the Great North Road on a warm morning. But who was he? I am sorry that I do not know; for even those local authorities who might be expected to have certain information on a point so interesting disagree entirely among themselves. What is certain, however, is that a traveller who carried a good deal of money in his saddle-bags, and was on his way to Doncaster, paused at Bawtry to refresh himself and to have some alteration made in his saddle, which galled his horse's back. He might have spared the saddler's fee, had he known that as he rode out of Bawtry he would be robbed near the King's Wood, which was a nice convenient shelter, often used for cover by gentlemen waiting to accost travellers. Now, instead of going on to Doncaster, when his saddle bags had been lightened and his horse's burden eased, the traveller returned to Bawtry in great indignation: and making at once for the dwelling of the saddler, he found a tankard of ale which he had bestowed upon the fellow, to cement good feeling before

departure, standing still untouched, while the saddler was nowhere to be found. That a man in Bawtry should leave his liquor to go flat was strange and suspicious. The country was scoured, the saddler was caught, and very soon afterwards hung at York. As I look through the glass at the bottom of my tankard, tilted high above my chin, I declare he got no more than his deserts.

This King's Wood at the end of Bawtry Lane, where our traveller came to grief, was a place of evil reputation. I have passed it at nightfall not without a qualm, half fancying that I saw a horseman drawn up on the little piece of greensward in the shadow of the hedge. It is not night yet, nor near it; but I will not go that way. I will make a circuit, and reach Doncaster through some pretty places that I wot of which have no evil memories; and so I turn out of Bawtry half way up the north side of its straggling street, calling to mind as I mount a hill and see the old church below me, that other noted resident who came to an end as sad and much more painful than the saddler,—one Arthur Thistlewood, who laid a plot to kill a whole British Cabinet at once, and was cut in pieces for his pains,—you may see the axe at Newgate yet. I understand that Bawtry people cherish his memory; but for my part I am glad to pass out of the town which reminds me of him. How far away seem all conspiracies and treasons, as I ride once more into the open country through the hush of the summer afternoon! The high green grass is turning into bronze all over the face of the undulating country. The shadow of cool woods lies across the road. A little wind comes laden with sweet scents of hawthorn, and under the bushes a weary woman sits and fans herself, while her sodden husband lies back upon the bank asleep. Other wayfarers there are none; and so I ride on silently until, topping the crest of a little hill, I see a wide plain stretched out before me with the grand tower of Tickhill Church standing up no more than a mile away. Behind the tower there are the green ridges of swelling hills; and towards the left, on

the summit of a tree-clad mound, a solitary flagstaff marks the spot where from the earliest times there stood a noble castle, centre of an inheritance so splendid as to be often chosen for a queen's dowry, an "honour" which included portions of five counties, and which when not held by royalty itself, was always in the hands of great and noble barons.

In fact this quiet village, famed now chiefly for its walnuts, was one of the principal resorts of chivalry in Britain, being in the immediate neighbourhood of one of the only five places licensed by King Richard I. for holding tourneys when after his return from captivity he began to give encouragement to martial exercises. Not even the ground on which these splendid jousts were held can be identified to-day. The long and goodly village streets, through which so often the pennants of half the nobility of northern England must have fluttered, are occupied by flocks of ducks waddling from the pond upon the common, where a row of pollard willows bordering a sedgy stream invites the grazing cattle to stand within cool shade, flicking their tails drowsily. On the castle mound there are but few walls left; only a handsome gateway reminds us of the warriors who rode in and out beneath it. But for this gateway, it would be difficult to see in Tickhill an ancient place of arms. Its moat girdles the castle mound, still full of water as it used to be, a wide brown waterway threading the woodland which has invested the hillside. It lies there cool and beautiful in the hot afternoon, shot over with gold flashes which penetrate the overarching trees; but it has no terrors now, unless it be for evil children, bird's-nesting unlawfully upon the slopes. Ah, how far away seem those days, just after Marston Moor, when a garrison of rake-helly cavaliers held the ancient fortress, palisaded and defended by a strong moat and counterscarp, and were "exceedingly oppressive" to the country round. But Colonel Lilbourn came that way; and when he passed, the last vestiges of feudal England at Tickhill had disappeared for

ever, and that deep peace had fallen on the country villages in which they are buried even yet.

Maybe it is just as well; for in the old days I certainly should not have ridden where I will through the sunny country without inquiring carefully whether a party was out from Tickhill, and giving it a wide berth if it were. As it is, I pass on through the village without a care; and when it lies behind me by a mile or so, I strike off to the right, where a rough lane passing through a farm brings me out on the main road from Rotherham to Worksop. It is a pleasant country, fertile and thickly wooded and by no means flat. For here one enters on the limestone ridges, and presently we shall climb up them and see their characteristic features. But now the road is running by tall woods which hide a spot of very curious interest; and passing through a gate just where the open fields begin again, I follow a little winding path dropping down beneath limestone scars, up which shrubs and trailing ivy grow luxuriantly. This path descends into the valley of a little river by whose bank, half buried in the greenery, stands the stately gatehouse of Roche Abbey, set close beneath the precipice from which the monks, seizing the most striking feature of their valley with that quick sense of picturesqueness which distinguished the Cistercians, named themselves "monachi de rupe," Monks of the Rock. So the noblest of the homes of this order in the north was "de Fontibus," while their lordly colony in the far distant land of Norway was named "The vale of light." The warm glow of the afternoon falls into the valley in a flood. The little stream gleams with its reflexion as it steals along beneath the trees. In an open glade a trifle higher up a couple of red-roofed cottages stand shining in the sun, and the fowls go to and fro clucking in the short grass. In the abounding stillness one might fancy that all human life had ceased on the departure of those who planned and built the lovely walls which are now a shattered ruin, waiting in some enchanted slumber till their

master's hand shall set them up once more in their ancient glory, and the sound of chanting roll again through the hollow and over the short turf on the limestone crags above. I sit down in the shadow of the bank and rest awhile in this, the loveliest spot that I shall see to-day.

Three hundred years and more have gone by since the monks of the Rock were driven out of their little Eden, and still the river runs down sparkling through the woods as if it were expecting them to-morrow. God knows with what extremity of pride or greed this old house may have been filled when the great ruin fell upon it. Gross charges were laid against all monks for many a generation before that evil day.

"You have three daughters at home," said a gentleman of France to King Richard I., "whom you love more than the grace of God; they are Pride, Luxury, and Avarice."

"My friend," replied the King, "they are no longer at home. I have married Pride to the Templars, Luxury to the Black Canons, and Avarice to the Cistercians."

I note the taunt, and pass it by. For in this life of human men, where the loftiest ideals and the noblest hopes decay and are corrupted so very fast, we may desire passionately to be judged and measured by what was best and greatest in us, just as a mountain is measured by its highest summit, rather than by a balance struck between its heights and its abysses. It is mere justice so to judge; and I will therefore think of the Cistercians, not as they may have been on their dissolution, but as they certainly were at the time of their foundation, full eight centuries ago,—reformers, men revolting from the easy life and lax practices which had crept into the monasteries of their day; men struck with fear for their salvation, fleeing into the wilderness, seeking places the wildest and most solitary they could find, where toiling and fasting, in hunger and in peril of their bodies, they might, according to their own hope, save their souls alive.

Such a spot was this cleft among the limestone crags—no

pleasant hollow in a fertile country, as we see it now, but a wild chasm in a land of dense forests and morasses, pierced by no better roads than mule tracks, and by few of those;

Roche Abbey.

haunted by wild animals in great profusion, and by almost equal numbers of desperate and outlawed men, from whose necessities even monks could expect no more forbearing treat-

ment than full men have received from fasting ones in all ages of the world. To this solitude, this valley filled with unknown perils, came a little band of monks alone ; and here they pitched their first rough dwellings, and endured the weather. We do not know whence they came ; whether from Fountains, or Rievaulx, or by direct secession from some older abbey ; but amid the spiritual exaltation which occupied their loneliness during the first years of their sojourn here, gazing long at the irregularities of the rock face, they fancied that they saw on it a semblance of Christ distended on a cross ; and that image seeming to them a miracle, became very holy in their eyes, and drew many pilgrims from all parts of England.

You will search vainly for the image now. Such as the scar was in all ages, before the monks entered the narrow valley, such it has become again, a rough sheer precipice, rising by the north side of the abbey church so close that it must have darkened all the space within. It is at this spot that one can best appreciate the beauty of the great building which rose slowly from the ground in what was then a wilderness ; and can gain some comprehension of the vastness of the effort which set itself unresting to the accomplishment of so great a task. Let no one fancy that the fruits of this labour and struggle in the desert have perished with the monks. In many another valley of this broad land of Yorkshire, monks were toiling with as much fortitude as here, following the light through cold and hunger and every evil that can assail man's body, yet surmounting every one, and leaving behind them triumphant proofs of victory. Their hopes and aspirations may have been right or wrong, their religion false or true ; I do not dogmatise about it. But sure I am that while their actual achievements are laid waste, even as I see them here before me, the life of England was the richer and the stronger for their struggle ; and as no group of men can follow out a great design laboriously without bequeathing to their successors some depth of outlook, some encouragement to strength of purpose, so there must be

among the twisted strands which form the life of England some cord of power which would not have been there had not these Englishmen sacrificed their ease eight centuries ago in accomplishing a high conception. Let us so think of the Cistercians and of all other monks, as they meet us constantly in roving round this land of Yorkshire; for we who deal with bygone times, however lightly, are trustees of the reputation of the dead.

It is time to move onwards. I climb slowly out of the solitary valley, leaving it filled with the gold light of the waning afternoon, welling over with peace and silence: and following my road, I mount at last upon the limestone crags, where gray peaks of splintered stone stand out among the short, sweet turf. Deep below the road a valley runs, closed at length by the shoulder of a hill, on which the red-roofed village of Maltby stands shining pleasantly in the evening sun. It is a pretty spot. The crags are fantastically piled; a few sheep go browsing in and out among them; and from the depths of the valley, coming out of I know not what cool region, there blows a keen and stimulating air, growing sharper as the sun drops lower in the sky. It is already late, and I have far to go. I ride on quickly through the falling twilight, while the fresh evening air brings out every scent of flowers in the hedgerows, together with that odour of springing grass which blows across the fields in no other season than the early summer. I have turned off from the road which goes to Rotherham, a grimy place visited by none except those whose interest in church architecture is strong enough to brave the certainty of being choked with smoke and blinded with coal dust. We will not regret leaving Rotherham unseen; but there is a little scrap of ancient building lying no more than a few miles away upon my left, which I should certainly have visited had I not lingered so long in the pleasant valley of Roche Abbey. It is an ancient cross at Thrybergh; and since it is growing fast too dark to see the outlines of the country, which besides is of no very

striking interest, I will tell the story of St. Leonard's Cross, an ancient relic of the days of chivalry, when the district of South Yorkshire was a pleasant land, unsoiled by the smoke and smother which for its great good oppress it in our day.

The cross is nothing but a weather-beaten fragment now; but in the days when knights and nobles from all Europe were flocking to the Holy Land it was tall and stately, and stood conspicuously by the wayside calling travellers to prayer. If one may trust the story told by Sir John Reresby, whose Memoirs are excellent reading for those interested in the tale of Yorkshire life in the Commonwealth and the time of Charles II., the saint was of his own family, no less a person indeed than one Leonard de Reresby, who, serving his prince in the Holy Land, was taken prisoner by the Saracens, who held him captive near seven years. Now it is a grievous thing for any spouse to lack her lord's society for seven years. The law in its mercy admits as much: and Dame Reresby knew it did. So when the seventh winter had gone by, and there came to Thrybergh neither palmer nor wandering minstrel charged with news of the absent lord, the indignant lady resolved to set another in his place who might appreciate her more.

But in his lonely cell in Palestine, her husband also had remembered how the law ran; so that "being apprehensive of this accident, by the power of prayer he was miraculously delivered and insensibly conveyed with shackles and gyves upon his limbs, and laid upon the East Hill in Thrybergh Field as the bells tolled for his wife's second marriage." Indeed a very striking miracle!—and I wish Sir John had gone on to describe with what varying degrees of rapture the wedding party received and greeted the poor, dirty, fettered prisoner whom they found lying in the field on their way to church. What he said to them might be amusing also; but that is a story which everybody can tell himself.

It is no wonder that a knight who was served so freely by

the powers of Heaven should afterwards become a saint. The very fetters which were taken off his legs hung at Thrybergh for centuries, till a thrifty Dame Reresby, in the absence of her lord, contemning their sanctity, beat them into ploughshares. It was an impious act. I hope she won forgiveness. But I am puzzled about the Crusading Reresby: for another story—Sir John does not tell it, though it is the prettier of the two—relates how he plighted his troth at this very cross, then old and holy, and bade farewell to his promised bride, the heiress of the Normanvilles. Years passed, and nothing had been heard of Reresby. His betrothed did not falter in her faith to him, but her friends were urgent, and she believed him dead. By degrees she ceased to hope for his return; and at length she gave consent to another suitor. The bridal day was at hand, when a secret message was brought to her, bidding her go to St. Leonard's Cross by night. She went, and in the gloom beside the ancient column found a palmer waiting. Tremulously she went up to him, and began to question him what he did there, and why he called her into the lonely road by night, knowing full well that only one man would have named that meeting-place; and so the long troth was knitted up again on the spot where it began, and the ancient cross gained a warmth of human interest which it will not lose while any stone of it remains.

It is dark enough now for many a lover to pledge his faith unseen in the warm, scented lanes. In the night time these old stories seem real and very near us. For in the day, when every modern alteration pins our thoughts down to the present time, it is hard to project our fancies back into a world of which the outer aspect was so different. But this curtain of the dark is the same which every generation of mankind since the foundation of the world has watched falling from the sky or stealing up amid the fields; so that when the colour goes out of the plains and hills, and the outlines of the hedgerows grow indistinct and shadowy in the coming gloom, I know that the face of the country is

taking on the aspect which was familiar to long-dead monks and knights, and to others also who dwelt upon the earth long centuries before they came. The age of the Crusaders seems

Conisboro' Castle.

faint and distant in the sunlight. But I am already in it when night falls; and the world grows young with each stride of the coming darkness.

Those lighted windows which I pass are in the town of Conisburgh. I can scarce see the keep of the old castle reared against the gloom; but it is as well. Scott has told me all I want to know of Conisborough; and I will not strip the magic from another story by visiting its scene in daylight. Do wise men search for the very rocks which Turner painted, or try to see whence Richmond towered over Swale, as on his canvas? Plague on it! we have not all the gift of eyes; let us use his thankfully who will lend them to us. And as I run out into the scented dark again, and all Conisborough spins away behind me like a dream, let me say that as I go through Yorkshire I claim full liberty to mention or to leave out what I choose. I will describe what pleases me; I will write fully of the things which catch my fancy; and if questioned as to why I did this, or left that undone, I will attempt no other answer than a child might make who has gone through the hedgerows plucking this flower because he liked its scent, and that because it had a glorious red colour, and again another because it twined prettily among the rest, or was pearled over with the dew, or for no reason at all, but mere wilfulness. I know well that I have left many a flower in the hedges, and he who will may go and glean them after me.

CHAPTER II

DONCASTER, PONTEFRACT, AND TOWTON

It is a grey morning. Now and then a splash of rain whips across the window pane, or a sobbing wind slips in and stirs the curtains gently. The sky is dark with rough clouds, and there is every sign of breaking weather. I will not travel on the long road to York, stored as it is with very noble memories, until the sun shines and I can do them justice. In the meantime it is pleasant to linger in the comely streets of Doncaster, which is in a truer sense than Bawtry the gate of Yorkshire ; for in this town, built to command the passage of the Don, more than one north country storm cloud has broken and discharged itself in blood.

To me it seems that all the north country, properly so called, lies beyond the Don, if not indeed beyond the Humber. There is nothing in the aspect of Doncaster to-day which marks it as distinct from any other trim and prosperous town in the great midland shires, where burly, good-humoured farmers go about the streets, and life is slow and ruminating. From time to time the town wakes up to busy life and action ; but that is in the autumn, when the slim racehorses are brought out of the station with quivering nostrils and large, timid eyes, tossing their delicate heads and starting nervously at every sound. Then the crowds gather thickly under the tall trees that flank the avenues beside

the racecourse on the London road : and the cool autumn sun shines down on a scene of tense excitement which breaks into roars like thunder when the horses get away from the starting-post, and now one and now another draws before the rest. But in the months that lie between those tumultuous days of *fête*, Doncaster slumbers as soundly almost as the Roman Emperor who is fabled to lie buried at the corner of Hall Gate, forgotten by the townsmen tramping to and fro above him.

Sleepy the town may be, but it is admirably comfortable ; and thus we find that poets, who generally start upon their loftiest flights from spots where their baser parts are best attended to, have sung at some length the praises of its civic head :—

> " Sweet girls of Pindus, hither bring
> Your drums and bagpipes hollow,
> The Mayor of Doncaster I sing,
> Assist me, oh Apollo ! "

It was vastly well for the author of this tripping verse, aided by the god whom he piously invoked, to celebrate the pomp of the municipality. But Apollo is not likely to help me with my prose ; and so I must choose humbler subjects. I go wandering through the goodly, well-kept streets, till I reach the bank of the deep and treacherous river, —

> " The shelving slimy river Don,
> Each year a daughter or a son, "

as the half-forgotten rhyme puts it, with some trace of that old pagan fancy which saw in a stream of flowing water a cruel, sentient thing, drawing now one and now another to death within its embraces. On a little knoll stands the once ancient parish church, an old building reconstructed, dominating the town from this side with some grandeur : and before me lies the town bridge, crossing the river in the very spot where all the chivalry of Northern England on an October day in 1536 lay beneath the banner of the Five Wounds of Christ, a gallant host of thirty thousand men well armed and encamped on the

further bank of the river, in full face of the royal army which King Henry VIII. had sent to check them, and against which they were as four to one. Thus early in our wanderings in Yorkshire have we encountered the most bitter of north country tragedies,—one of which the scars and ruin will confront us again and again in the records of ruined families and slaughtered monks. Whatever may have been the truth of the charges brought against the conduct of the monasteries, there was nothing in this great armed protest against their suppression which was not noble. Those who made it were the very pith and marrow of the northern counties, men who all their lives had been warders of England against the raiding Scots, veteran soldiers, hoary statesmen, peaceful country gentlemen, hot-blooded lads, all of whom had been taught to look with awe on the houses of religion so richly endowed by the piety of their ancestors, so exquisitely built when other dwellings had no beauty save that of strength, hallowed by the most sacred associations of four centuries, the burial-places of their fathers, the schools where they themselves were taught. To the abbots and priors they had resorted for advice in every difficulty ; from their number they had chosen the executors of their wills and the trustees of their estates—there was no intimate transaction of their lives in which the monks were not concerned, and that not as intruders, but as wise friends willingly consulted. These trusted counsellors it was who were torn suddenly from the midst of the society which relied on them, and which had no substitutes to take their place. That society would have been base indeed if it had struck no blow in their defence.

So there the host lay along the further bank of the river Don, menacing and angry, a splendid and pathetic protest against the progress of resistless forces which were even then moulding the old feudal world into a modern shape ; and if it had attacked the King's small army, who can doubt that it might have set back the hands of the clock for a few hours still ? But the powers which rule events are not to be so flouted. Robert Aske,

that simple lawyer and country gentleman, who emerges from obscurity as a leader of this great army, was filled with noble scruples, and dispersed his troops on a pledge of redress of grievances. The action was as prudent as that of a swallow which builds its nest in the crater of Vesuvius, trusting that the fires will never break out again. The King's wrath burst forth; the blood of noble gentlemen who trusted him was poured out like water; and the whole great tragedy swept onwards to a close of which we can say nothing but "Alas, alas!"

It is long, very long ago since Robert Aske went bravely to the scaffold, while the gibbets stood thickly by the wayside in every part of Yorkshire. But he and his comrades are not yet forgotten, their sturdy manhood is a cherished memory in Yorkshire, and it may be that he would not have deemed his life a wasted one had he known how many of those who hear his story told after three centuries can still say of him that he did well.

It is time to leave Doncaster, yet before I go I have another tale to tell, the story of one of those great feats of lusty daring which have won their reputation for English fighting-men in every age and country. It happened in the great Civil War, that sad conflict in which Yorkshire played a mighty part, chiefly on the side of the Parliament; and as the years drew on towards the crowning tragedy of the King's death, his cause had almost wholly perished in the north, save that it lived in the hearts and secret counsels of a few brave and desperate men. By what cunning stratagem a mere handful of these gentlemen seized Pontefract Castle, that grim stronghold on the passes of the Aire, I shall tell presently; and there they lay in a fortress reckoned to be impregnable, the last Royal garrison in the north country, harrying the enemy as far as they could strike, carrying off convoys, and flouting the military strength of the Parliament with reckless dash and hardihood. They were joined by cavaliers from other parts of England; and at last,

like a swarm of wasps settling on an orchard in September, they stung so fiercely that the Parliament sent General Rainsborough with a substantial force to smoke them out. The General invested the Castle with regular lines of attack; and while the siege progressed, he himself, for some reason of strategy or comfort, lay in quarters at Doncaster.

Now it seemed intolerable to this band of Rakehelly cavaliers that a crop-eared General of the Parliament should presume to interfere with their amusements, and they resolved to free themselves. Obviously the best way of doing this, since they had not strength enough to drive off the besiegers by a sortie in force, was to get possession of the General; and they had a double motive for attempting this, since the trusted leader of the Royalists in the north, Sir Marmaduke Langdale, had been taken, and was lying a prisoner at Nottingham, while an infamous story ran from mouth to mouth to the effect that it was Rainsborough's intention to bring Langdale beneath the walls of Pontefract, and give the garrison a choice between immediate surrender and the execution of their general before their eyes. "Upon this," says one who was himself among the garrison, "Captain W. Paulden, who commanded all the few horse in the Castle, laid a design to surprise Rainsborough in his quarters in Doncaster; not to kill him, but to take him prisoner, and exchange him for our own general, and it was only his own fault that he was killed, and not brought prisoner to the Castle. This design seemed the more feasible, because the General and his men were in no apprehension of any surprise; the Castle being twelve miles off, closely besieged, and the only garrison for the King in England.

"In order to execute this our purpose, Captain W. Paulden made choice of twenty-two men, such as he most confided in. At midnight, being well horsed, we marched through the gate that was kept open, over the meadows, between two of the enemy's horseguards, whom by the favour of the night we passed undiscovered. Early next morning we came to Mex-

borough, a village four miles west above Doncaster, where there was a ferry-boat. There we rested to refresh ourselves and our horses till about noon.

"In the meantime we sent a spy into Doncaster to know if there was any discovery of a party being out, and to meet us as soon as it was dark at Cunsborough, a mile from Doncaster, which he did, and assured us there was no alarm taken by the town and that a man would meet us at sunrise,—it being then the beginning of March,—who would give us notice if all was quiet. Thither the man came accordingly; the sign he was to bring with him to be known by was a Bible in his hand."

Captain Paulden then divided his twenty-two men into four parties; six were to attack the main guard, six the guard on the bridge, four were ordered to General Rainsborough's quarters; and the Captain with the remaining six, after he had seen the four enter the General's lodging, was "to beat the streets and keep the enemy from assembling."

It would be painting the lily to comment on the airy audacity of this attempt by two-and-twenty men to kidnap the general of a hostile army from out of his own quarters in broad daylight; and if anything could point the insolence of the design more strongly than the bare recital of the facts, it is surely the narrator's reproachful comment that it was only Rainsborough's own fault that he was killed. Now three of the parties into which the little force was divided carried out their plans with something like success. "The four that went to General Rainsborough's lodgings pretended to bring letters to him from Cromwell, who had then beaten the Scots. They met at the door the General's lieutenant, who conducted them to his chamber, and told him, being in bed, that there were some gentlemen had brought him letters from General Cromwell. Upon which they delivered Rainsborough a packet wherein was nothing but blank paper. Whilst he was opening it, they told him he was their prisoner, but that not a hair of his head should be touched if he would go quietly with them. Then they disarmed his

[*To face page* 25.

"*The Cavaliers cantered back across the bridge.*

lieutenant who had innocently conducted them to his chamber, and brought them both downstairs. They had brought a horse ready for General Rainsborough upon which they bid him mount. He seemed at first willing to do it, and put his foot in the stirrup ; but looking about him and seeing none but four of his enemies and his lieutenant and his centinel, whom they had not disarmed stand by him, he pulled his foot out of the stirrup and cryed, 'Arms ! Arms !' Upon this one of our men, letting his sword and pistol fall, catch't hold of him and they, grappling together, both fell down in the street. Then General Rainsborough's lieutenant catching our man's pistol that was fallen, Captain Paulden's lieutenant who was on horseback dismounts and runs him through the body as he was cocking the pistol. Another of our men run General Rainsborough at the neck as he was struggling with him that had caught hold on him ; yet the General got upon his legs with our man's sword in his hand ; but Captain Paulden's lieutenant ran him through the body, upon which he fell down dead."

Thus this bold plot miscarried through the obstinacy of a hot-headed man who, having two supporters at his elbow and a thousand more within call, positively would not let himself be kidnapped by four troopers of the enemy, though they promised that they would not hurt him ! Unreasonable fellow, who could have foreseen his folly ? So the party from Pontefract chorused among themselves as they rode back sorrowfully without their man—for they all got clear away, having alarmed the Parliament men so much by their sudden onslaught that, if we may trust the account already quoted, the Roundheads were all running out into the fields in their nightgear when the cavaliers cantered back across the bridge.

See, the sky is breaking, and a gleam of sunshine falls over the old town as I ride out across the river, following the road to Pontefract. It is, at first, a very level country, the southern portion of that great plain which intersects Yorkshire through its whole extent from north to south. As we shall see later,

much of this plain is very beautiful, but here it lacks the shadow of the hills which rise on either hand as one goes north, and has thus no other charm than that which belongs to every fresh, well-cultivated countryside. The land is richly fertile; for, is it not a portion of that paradise which Bishop Tonstall praised so highly when he avouched, in riding to York with King Henry VIII., that in all his travels through Europe, east and west, he had not found its match, "there being within ten miles of Haslewood"—of which old mansion there will be more to say presently—"165 manor-houses of lords, knights and gentlemen of the best quality, 275 several woods, whereof some of them contain 500 acres, 32 parks and 2 chases of deer, 120 rivers and brooks, whereof 5 be navigable, 76 water-mills for the grinding of corn . . . ." Indeed, I have neither leisure nor patience to go on with the worthy Bishop's statistics. I do not know what King Henry thought of them. Perhaps he did not listen; unless it be that his very nimble mind followed the same course as mine, and reflected what a land this must be to plunder. Do but think of it! "165 lords, knights or gentlemen of the best quality," not to mention their families and retainers, all going to and fro by this road upon their lawful or unlawful occasions! Consider the purses, the fat purses which must have gone along this way in the pouches of poor, timid travellers, so scared that a single whoop from an unseen farm-lad was enough to send them scuffling to the nearest shelter—why should a man not stretch his hand out when the plums hung ripe and ready to drop into it? So argued many a tall fellow who knew well every turn and hedgerow of this road of evil memories. Here is the spot named "Hanging Wood"—a suggestive designation, which may have made more than one bold lad shiver—a bit of copse hiding an ancient quarry, than which no better cover could be wished. In fact it was a favourite resort of that famous rascal Nevison, whose gallant feats in lifting purses have snatched his name from dusty

oblivion, and shrined it high in the affections of northcountrymen, who even claim for him the mythical glories of that ride to York which has been ascribed without much reason to Dick Turpin. It was at this very spot—so the rustics will tell you still with affectionate regret for the memory of one greater than any of our own day—it was even here that Nevison robbed the steward of Sir George Cooke of Wheatley of all the money he had just collected from the tenants. He had ridden out from Doncaster with the steward, chatting very affably, so that when he suddenly clapped a pistol to the poor frightened servant's chest, told him who he was, and bade him hand out the rhino, the wretched fellow had not a moment to collect whatever courage he possessed, and so was shorn as meekly as any lamb.

I fear there is something demoralising about this road which may lead me down the primrose path as speedily as it did poor Nevison and many another, if I do not contrive to fix my attention soon on loftier associations; and in the very nick of time there is the old grey tower of the parish church of Adwick Le Street standing up above the trees upon my right. That will do as well as any to restore the tone of my morality. For do not all good Americans, and some others who pass this way, diverge to see the tombs of the Washington family in the Thellusson Chapel of that ancient House of God, and speculate upon the true solution of the endless controversy whence, and from what branch of the many-rooted family of Washington, came the immediate ancestors of that great man whom the world has united to regard as one of the patriots least unstained by baser motives whose actions history has recorded. His fame has long since passed into the rank of cherished memories for England, whence he sprang, no less than for America for which he fought; and as the whole subject lies open to surmise, I please my fancy with the speculation that it may, perhaps, have been this quiet village, lost on the outskirts of the great

plain, to which George Washington's thoughts returned when he remembered the Mother Country—this pretty cluster of ancient cottages, up whose fronts the first roses are already breaking into bloom, a peaceful, ruminating spot which has lain silent through all the centuries, knowing neither noise nor bustle since the old Roman highway which ran through it dropped into disuse.

It is but a small détour which I have made, and I regain

Robin Hood's Well, near Doncaster.

the main road a mile or so beyond the point at which I left it, undulating pleasantly for a little way, till at last I see by the roadside a stone cupola supported on four columns, which is really much too interesting to pass by without consideration. For this, which is now dry and dusty, was the well of Robin Hood, so called in every ancient record which we have, and possibly not without some justification, though, indeed, most wayside wells are so very old that one must seek for their first origin in ages far beyond those to which the exploits of bold

Robin are accredited, and it may even be that this, as was suggested by Hunter, the historian of South Yorkshire, was in fact one of the springs made available for wayfarers by good King Aeduin full twelve hundred years ago. For that great ruler, says the venerable Bede, "took such care for the good of his nation that in several places where he had seen clear springs near the highways he caused stakes to be fixed, with brass dishes hanging at them for the refreshment of travellers; nor durst any man touch them for any other purpose than that for which they were designed, either through the dread they had of the King, or for the affection which they bore him." At any rate, this well was a place of note sufficient to suggest that it had collected through long ages the repute of a spot meet for halting and refreshment; and thus it was that when Henry VIII. rode this way upon his coronation he was met by the Earl of Northumberland and "a right great and noble company on Barnesdale, a little beyond Robbyn Haddez ston." That the well bears the name of Robin Hood may, of course, be nothing more than another instance of that curious tendency among the common people to give familiar names to those objects of which they do not know the origin—just as a group of ancient barrows on the East Coast bear the name of "Robin Hood's butts."

There, let us drop the antiquary, and be no wiser than a child again. For this is Barnsdale, and the wide country which we see to-day dotted with no more than fine clumps of trees, suggestive rather of pleasant parks than of virgin forest, was once the very heart of the greenwood, the chosen haunt of Robin Hood, and out of all the mighty Forest of Sherwood the most famous and most dreaded part.

"The woodwele sang and would not cease,
Sitting upon the spray,
Sae loud he wakened Robin Hood,
In the greenwood where he lay."

He may sing as he will now without wakening bold Robin; and, indeed, there are some too curious persons to be found who deny that he ever could have done it: not meaning to depreciate the woodwele's power of shrill piping, but being minded to deny that there ever was a Robin Hood who slept or wakened on this earth. The argument is, I understand, that Robin was no more than "a faint western echo of the heroes of solar mythology"; indeed, no better than poor William of Cloudesley, "that good yeman," whom modern wisdom has also relegated to the land of shadows, and who has been identified, or very nearly, by some learned professor with "the Nibelungs, the heroes of cloudland." It is not now for the first time that I notice what a short and easy way there seems to be from the studies of professors into cloudland. But let the professors e'en go there if they will. Cloudland is a long way off; and it is moreover full of clever people, who are always a nuisance to their neighbours. We will stay upon the green earth, and watch the shadows sweeping by across the trees, and smell the fresh scents of the springing grass, and catch what we can of the lustiness of that strong, simple life among the downs and woodlands of which the old ballad writers sang in such incomparable language.

"In somer when the shawes be sheyne,
And leves be large and long,
Hit is full mery in feyre Foreste
To here the fowlys song.
To se the dere draw to the dale
And leve the hilles hee,
And shadow hem in the leves grene
Under the grenewode tree."

Is not the rush and trembling of those lines more excellent than all the speculations of all the professors in Christendom? Ah, let us toss the books away, and come forth from the dusty study into the green world and the bright sunshine and the

old plain faith in the stories which we loved when we were young. Is it not enough to watch the dawn breaking over the earth, or to see the green trees growing black as the twilight steals out from the woods?

Since the days of those old ballad writers who knew so well how to sing of the joy of earth, the whole face of this country has been wondrously changed. Perhaps some effort of imagination is needed when one tries to realise that this wide, open meadow land was formerly a dark forest, and that the sunny fields and copses by which the old road runs so pleasantly, were deep woodland glades where travellers went in fear of violence, and desperate men herded together like the wolves. I know not with any certainty what may have been the boundaries of Sherwood Forest in ancient times, for that excellent custom of the court of Regarders has gone out of use, which was wont to impress the bounds so firmly on the memories of those who dwelt in the locality. These Regarders used to take a survey of the forest every third year, and in their train went a number of boys collected willy-nilly from the immediate vicinity. The boys were chosen because it was held that the memories of the young are good; yet it was found desirable to impress them firmly with the actual limits, lest any wandering fancy should distract their attention at the important moment, and so the boys were bumped heavily upon the ground whenever the boundary was reached; or if the limit were a stream, that was much better, for the urchins were thrown in and "paddled about" until their attention was awake. "Is that stream the boundary?" one of these witnesses was asked in his riper age. "Ees," he answered hastily, "Ees, that 'tis; I'm sure o't by the same token that I were tossed into't, and paddled about there like a water rat till I were haafe deead."

By such salutary measures the great area of the forest was preserved intact for the king, who alone might hunt there lawfully, since no subject could hold a forest; and all the beasts

that roamed the greenwood, whether "beasts of chase and venery" or "rascals"—to adopt the division of good Dame Juliana Berners—were the sole property of the king, guarded for him by a great army of officials, Warders, Verderers, Foresters, Agisters, Regarders, and I know not what besides, who constituted the lawful population of the forest. But besides these officers who lived by administering the law, how vast must have been the number of fugitives who lived by breaking it! For during the countless wars, invasions, and revolts which disturbed north country life generation after generation through all our early history, each one followed by its chain of proscriptions and ruthless persecution of the losing side, there were few hiding places so secure as these great forests, where a man might lie hid for months and years in the deep secret glades, having at least some shelter from the weather, and the best of venison as oft as he chose to twang his bow. And there was merry company in the forests too, for in all the shires of England vert and venison were protected by special courts and judges, whose favourite punishment was outlawry; and, human nature in those days being much the same as it is now, those courts were usually busy, turning out outlaws fast enough to make the large forests populous.

That this punishment of outlawry was so very frequent is no mere guess. The records of some at least among the courts are available to this day, and the names of the culprits, with their sentences and brief details of their offences, may there be read and reckoned up. Page after page of the coucher book of Pickering is filled with records of such crimes; and it does not admit of doubt that if Robin Hood himself be mythical, there were in Sherwood whole tribes of outlaws leading exactly such a life as is attributed to him. Why, then, should we doubt the tales which delighted us in our childhood, located as they are in that very part of Sherwood which must have been the most probable scene of such exploits? To what part of the great forest could those who lived by plunder resort

with such certainty of a plenteous harvest as to this region of Barnsdale, through which ran the great highway from north to south, crowded in all ages by wealthy travellers, for the most part very frightened, and ready to drop their purses and run off at the first onslaught?

There, I have done with argument.

> "Then come with old Khayyam, and leave the wise
> To talk; one thing is certain, that life flies."

It does, indeed, and I know not how we shall get round this vast county of Yorkshire without a stricter attention to business than we have shown up to this point. This is a country full of occasions for digression; let us gird ourselves up to resist temptation. I turn away from the waterless well of Robin Hood, and climb the hill with resolution to think no more of him. When I reach the top I find an undulating road which runs so pleasantly over the sunny country, that the mere joy of motion is enough to give me satisfaction for the moment, and I accordingly forget all else until I find myself mounting the declivity of a long ridge under which the town of Pontefract lies in a hollow, and stretches up the further slope towards the ruins of the once noble castle. There is an old saw current in some parts of Yorkshire, which says of anything very sure to happen that it is "as sure as a louse at Pomfret." I did not see a l . . . Cht! What am I saying? I mean only that the town seemed to me a clean and comely one, though I did not much regard it, being in truth over full of eagerness to see the castle, which, after all, when found, is but a broken and a very shattered castle. In old days I should have seen its heavy battlements standing guard above the town as I top this road, but the old walls have crumbled to a mere shadow of their former grandeur, and the noble building which used to dominate the prospect from every side is now difficult to see until one is close upon it. Then one finds enclosed in a modern garden

a few broken towers and walls, roofless and blackened by the weather, terrible to no one any longer, but speaking loudly to all who care to listen of the vast changes which the last two centuries have brought with them in the life of England, and in the face and aspect of the country. Yet broken and useless as it stands to-day, Pontefract will not cease to be visited till one thing has decayed and perished utterly which has more permanence than stone—that is the memory of man.

For this old fortress, standing on a site so important as to draw on itself the chief attention of all those who fought in northern England in every age of history, has gathered round

Pontefract.

itself so great a mass of tragedy and romance as is hardly to be matched elsewhere. "Ah, Pomfret, Pomfret, ah thou bloody prison!" Its Roman name, "Ad Pontem Fractam," at the broken bridge, takes us back to that age of desolation which followed the departure of the Romans, when their noble public works fell into ruin, when those who had learnt the art of engineering from them were hunted to the hills and slaughtered by the inroads of Saxon pirates, and the broken bridge, pathetic witness of the great tragedy of ruin and murder, must have stood the most conspicuous object near the town. Scarce any echoes from those distant days of terror have reached our ears; but as we listen to the tale of history flowing down the

centuries towards our own the name of Pontefract arrests us again and again. I would that I had space to speak of half the memories of Pontefract, of the great Earl Thomas of Lancaster, who played the part of Simon de Montfort with less wit, and who was broken by the power of the King, and executed near this his own town of Pontefract, yet who leaves in history the memory of one who supported a true cause, and had the welfare of the country at his heart. It is a melancholy tale, but the pity of it pales before the tragedy of that poor, friendless king, Richard II., who fell so easily from his throne, and having seen his rival mount it, was hurried down to Yorkshire secretly, first to Pickering, and was at last brought hither, where without fear of question or chance of rescue the world believes that he was done to death. Yet there were those living at the time who did not believe that this foul deed was wrought at Pontefract; and it is, perhaps, still a question that may, in some degree, be written down an unsolved mystery whether the king really perished in the year set down in history. For three years after his body, or that which passed as such, had been laid to rest in London, a wild story was whispered round the kingdom that Richard was living, and in Scotland. A lady of Irish extraction, born of the family of Bisset, met a poor vagrant in the Isle of Skye, and recognised him as the King, whom she had known upon his Irish expedition. Others caught up the belief. The outcast was sent over to the mainland, and the Duke of Albany took charge of him. The Friars minors fathered the report, and carried it with them to every part of the three kingdoms.

Was this fellow an impostor? No other really than Thomas Warde, of Trumpington, a crazy varlet, who bore an accidental likeness to the poor dead King? He was, at any rate, able to keep up his imposture, if it were one, and eighteen years after Richard had been reported dead, his double was still in Scotland, attended by some followers who believed in

him. It is a strange story, and we may, perhaps, leave it, as did Wyntour in his chronicle :

> " Quethir he had bene king or nane,
> Ther wes bot few that wyst certaine.
> Of devotioune nane he wes,
> And seilden will had to here mes ;
> As he bare him, like wes he
> Oft half wod or wyld to be."

Poor hunted fugitive ! How his mind must have been racked with nameless terrors during all these years of humiliating pretension to a dignity which he never gained—terrors none the less real " quethir he had bene king or nane " ; for the arm of the King of England was terribly long, and when one remembers how many daggers he commanded, one marvels how any fugitive who claimed his throne could have kept breath in his body during twenty years. Yorkshire is prodigal of tales of hunted kings.

I know not how to tear myself away from Pontefract. Yet while I stand still upon the crumbling battlements, looking down upon the tower of the fine old ruined church far below me in the hollow, and catching now and then a glint of silver from the windings of the Aire through the distant plain, I remember one story, which I must tell for mere pleasure in its hardy insolence. It is the earlier part of that goodly narrative of Captain Paulden from which I quoted the description of a merry prank at Doncaster, and it tells the tale of the daring exploit by which the handful of cavaliers, who made so much noise round all the country, established themselves in the great old castle, which was thought to be the strongest in all England.

The King's cause was at very low ebb in the year before his execution, when half-a-dozen cavaliers began to look at Pontefract from afar off and sigh for it. They had held it once and had been smoked out of the eyrie. By force they knew they could not regain it ; but guile evens the weak with their

strongest foes, and thus these desperate men kept up their hearts. Colonel Cotterell was Governor of Pontefract for the Parliament, and so little likely did it seem that any attack would be made by the broken party of the King that the whole force at his command consisted of no more than 100 men, of whom the greater part were not even quartered in the castle, but were billeted at their ease in the town. Seeing their enemies thus lulled in false security, the cavaliers entered into secret correspondence with some members of the garrison, and succeeded in seducing from his faith a corporal, who engaged to be on duty on a certain night, and to offer no interruption to any gentlemen whom he might see approaching the walls with a ladder under cover of the darkness. At the time arranged certain plucky fellows did go to Pontefract with a ladder, but the scheme had gone a-gley. The friendly corporal was drunk. Another sentinel stood in his place, a meddling fellow, who fired on the gentlemen with the ladder and gave the alarm. No very great harm was done by his officious conduct, for none of the cavaliers was taken. But Colonel Cotterell, reflecting on what might have happened, decided that it would be better to have his whole force within the walls, and accordingly gave notice in the neighbourhood that he would purchase at the castle on a given day as many beds as would be required for the accommodation of his men.

Amongst others who heard that Colonel Cotterell wanted beds were the guileful cavaliers, and they resolved to supply his want themselves. The necessary arrangements were soon made, and a cartload of very nice beds was on its way to Pontefract. "With the beds," says Captain Paulden, "came Colonel Morice and Captain W. Paulden, like country gentlemen with swords by their sides, and about nine persons more, dressed like plain countrymen and constables to guard the beds, but armed privately with pocket pistols and daggers. Upon their approach the drawbridge was let down and the gates opened by our confederates within. Colonel Morice

and those who were with him entered the castle. The main-guard was just within the gate, and there our company threw down the beds, and gave a crown to some soldiers, bidding them fetch ale to make the rest of the guard drink, and as soon as they were gone out of the gate, they drew up the drawbridge, and secured the rest of the guards, forcing them into a dungeon hard by, to which they went down by about thirty stairs, and it was a place that would hold 200 or 300 men.

"Then Captain W. Paulden made one of the prisoners show him the way to the Governor's lodging, where he found him newly laid down upon his bed with his cloaths on, and his sword, being a long tuck, lying by him. The captain told him the castle was the King's and he was his prisoner ; but he without answering anything, started up and made a thrust at the captain, and defended himself very bravely, till being sore wounded, his head and arm cut in several places, he made another full and desperate push at the captain and broke his tuck against the bed-post, and then asked quarter, which my brother granted, and he for the present was put down among his own soldiers into the dungeon." Where I doubt not he greeted them with winged words which would be worth the hearing had any one recorded them.

Thus began the merry life of this garrison of brave cavaliers at Pontefract. It ended in the only manner possible, when the Parliament became triumphant everywhere ; but what makes the conclusion of the matter worth referring to is the fate of Colonel Morice. In the final accommodation for the surrender of the castle he and Lieutenant Blackburne with four others were excepted, being regarded as rebels more pestilent and dangerous than the rest. Yet General Lambert, admiring their soldierly qualities, gave them a chance of dying nobly by promising them their lives if they could cut their way out. The whole number wished for nothing better, and sallied out with desperate courage. Morice and Blackburne broke through their

enemies and gained the open country, but were taken a few days later near the coast of Lancashire, and brought to trial at York. In defiance of Lambert's promise, they were condemned to death, and lay in York Castle awaiting execution. On the last night of their lives they, by some friendly agency, got possession of a rope, with which they let themselves down the castle wall. Morice descended safely, and might have escaped with ease ; but Blackburne fell and broke his leg. Morice refused to leave him, and the guard found him standing by his helpless comrade, cheerful and undaunted, as he was still when a few hours later he mounted the scaffold side by side with his friend and went out of the world bravely in company with him. His portrait is at Sledmere. It shows a noble face.

Of the four who sallied out with him, one was slain and three were driven back within the castle. But the garrison did not desert them. They adopted a wonderful resource. In some disused portion of the castle they walled them up behind a screen of masonry, giving them provisions for a month, and there the three lay while the castle was surrendered and ransacked fruitlessly for them. When the pursuit was over, and the castle quiet, their friends succeeded in releasing them, and they all escaped.

Few have been the struggles in the stormy history of England in which Pontefract played no part ; and as I go down the steep hill past the ancient church, and over the level road towards Ferrybridge, I find myself plunging into a crowd of memories far more fierce and bloody than any I have named as yet, and entering a tract of country through which no one can pass even now without some throb of awe or pity for that infinite number of our forbears who fought and died among these sunny fields, casting off all ties of kindred, sons slaying fathers and fathers sons : a combat so terrible and unnatural that, used as men were to scenes of carnage in old times, no one among the ancient chroniclers can tell without some words of horror the story of a battle which was like no other battle

known to them, and of a slaughter so tremendous that for forty-eight hours, it is said, the River Cock ran blood. It is but a little way to Ferrybridge ; and here I will stand awhile and begin my tale, while the River Aire, a wide and placid stream, flows on beneath me through broad, level pastures bronzed with buttercups and ruddy sorrel. A quarter of a mile up stream is a little red-tiled village, having a square church tower on slightly higher ground rising dark against green woods. A keen wind blows the river into ruffles, and the light changes quickly on the willow bushes by the bank. To the eastward one can see nothing but bright gold and green, and cattle grazing in the rich grass, with a dim line of blue, hazy woods in the far distance—a silent, peaceful sight as any one could find in England.

This was the passage of the Aire which Pontefract Castle was set to guard. He who held Pontefract, held this passage also ; and he who held the passage had in his hands the key of York, that great and noble city which was the military centre of the north. Now in the crisis of the wars of York and Lancaster, King Edward IV. lay at Pontefract, having with him the Earl of Warwick, the great King-maker, and a vast host, while at York were King Henry and Queen Margaret, with Clifford, called "the Butcher," and an army which comprised nearly all the nobility of the North country ; for, roughly speaking, the North was for Lancaster and the South for York, and the hatred of the two was more deadly than has since been known in England. Now, placed as these two armies were, it was of consequence to both to hold the bridge at this spot where I stand ; for so the Yorkists might keep open a passage of retreat, while, on the other hand, King Henry, if his troops could win the passage, might check the enemy in crossing. So King Edward, knowing that the Lancastrians had advanced as far as Towton, told off men-at-arms to seize the bridge under Lord Fitzwalter and the Bastard of Salisbury, brother to the King-maker ; but in the night of

March 27th the Butcher Clifford, at the head of a large force of light cavalry, swooped down upon these meadows, surprised the Yorkists in their sleep, slew Fitzwalter and the Bastard of Salisbury, and held the bridge himself. Now, Hall, the chronicler, tells us that "when the Erle of Warwicke was enformed of this feate, he, like a man desperate, mounted on his hackney, and came blowyng to King Edward, saying: 'Syr, I pray God have mercy of their soules which in the beginnynge of your enterprise have lost their lives; and because I se no succors of the world, I remit the vengeaunce and punishment to God our Creator and Redeemer,' and with that lighted down and slewe his horse with his sworde, saiyng: 'Let him flie that wil, for surely I wil tary with him that wil tary with me,' and kissed the crosse of his swourde." Any one may judge how this spectacle inflamed the passion which was already raging under every banner in the army. It was proclaimed that in the coming battle no quarter should be given, and further that any man who had no stomach for the fight might then depart, but if he stayed, and wavered later, he should instantly be slain. In this grim humour Edward, who had the instinct of a born general, turned aside from the passage where Clifford lay expecting him, and led his army across the river at Castleford, three miles higher up, thus threatening to cut off Clifford from his friends and block the road by which he had advanced. Clifford saw his danger, and knew that he had lost the stake for which he played. He retreated instantly, and all along the undulating road through Sherburn he skirmished with the advance guard of the Yorkist army, hoping doubtless that as his own friends heard the din of fighting they would throw out succours and beat back the enemy who harassed him. Mile by mile he fought his way to Dintingdale, where a lane, which may have been the old highway, strikes off upon the left to the village of Saxton lying in a hollow. There the end came; and the Butcher, who had thrown off his helmet, perhaps for mere relief from weariness

and thirst, was transfixed with an arrow and slain. He was a bold and valiant soldier, and "Butcher" as he was, I know not if he was more bloody than other men in those fierce days. How he gained his tragic nickname I shall tell hereafter in its proper place. It is one of the mysteries left unexplained by the chroniclers why he was not succoured.

Let us turn off at this lane and go down to Saxton, by the way which the Yorkists' army must have followed as they came pressing on in this direction, over ground more open than it is to-day, till as they saw the church tower lying down below, they came in sight also of the host of Lancaster drawn up on the hill, which they had to cross ere reaching Tadcaster. It was late in the afternoon, and as the cold March twilight darkened down, Edward planted his standard bearing a sable bull on the height facing the Lancastrians, and drew his army up there through the night. When the dawn broke the two great armies looked in each other's face over a little hollow that divided them. It was Palm Sunday. I do not how far in the scattered farms and villages round about, men held their breath, or suspended the offices of life or of religion on that fatal morning. It may have been that even from Saxton Church, so close to the contending hosts, the sound of some chiming bell rose up on that last stillness of the dawn, bringing to all minds which were not wholly choked with hatred some memory of Him who died for all impartially; and it can hardly be that fear had seized so utterly upon that country-side that from some House of God in the locality, prayer did not go up all through the day for those who needed it as sorely as any who have ever lived.

Early in the morning, some say at five, others several hours later, both armies gave a great shout, "and the same instante time," says Hall, "there fell a small snyt or snow, which by violence of the wyn was driven into the faces of them which were of King Henries parte, so that their sight was somewhat blemished and minished. The Lord Fauconbridge, who led

the forward of King Edwardes battaile, being a man of great policie and of much experience in marciall feates, caused every archer under his standard to shot one flyght and then made them to stand still. The northern men feling the shoot, but by reson of the snow not wel vewing the distance between them and their enemies, like hardy men shot their schiefe arrowes as fast as they might, but al their shot was lost and their labour vayn, for they cam not nere the southern men by xl taylors yerdes." It is not easy to believe that the veteran generals of Lancaster were duped by so simple a device. But what is certain is that very early in the day the two armies were at close quarters, and that for many hours that great mass of men swayed backwards and forwards in the snow, hacking at each other with axes and with swords, amid a din of shrieks and battle cries such as no man's fancy can re-create, till at length when midday was far past, the throng of that bloodstained press began to move in one direction, and the Lancastrians were driven, fighting desperately, up that hill on which they had stood in pride a few hours earlier, past their stations, and down the old highway to Tadcaster, which drops by a steep descent to the River Cock. Up to this point they maintained some order; but as the beaten soldiery crowded down the precipitous incline, and saw their triumphant enemy pressing over the hill-top, slaughtering without mercy all whom their swords could reach, the courage and discipline of the fugitives failed them, they lost all formation and became a mere rabble, trampling over one another in their hurry to escape. Then ensued a scene of carnage on which it is better not to dwell; the bodies fell in the River Cock so thickly that they filled its channel up, and friend and foe alike swarmed over the little stream on a bridge of still living men. It is said that the river ran blood for eight-and-forty hours, while all over the hills blood was trampled into the snow in such quantities that when a thaw came all the furrows of the fields ran red.

Such was the fight on Towton Moor, the most terrible and

deadly which had been seen in England since Harold fell at Senlac. I stand on the hill above the village of Saxton, looking down upon the slopes where the thickest of the fight occurred. All the fields are full of green, waving wheat, and a plover rising from some sedgy hollow by the stream wheels round in circles overhead shrieking plaintively. The cottage gardens in the village are full of budding roses. Scarce one of them is old enough to have seen the battle, or to have harboured the dying men who must have been helped down that slope in crowds. Far away to eastwards stretches the great plain, roughened with green trees, softened by blue haze, stretching infinitely distant from the roots of the ridges where I stand. Summer has its hold upon the land, and here, where the hacking of the swords was loudest, there is no sound breaking the drowsy afternoon, save the calling of the plover overhead. I go on past the Bloody Meadow, past Towton Dale Quarry, and so up to the old steep road, down which the routed troops crowded in confusion, and leave behind me the whole fatal ground, over which to this day there grows in large, irregular patches, a small dwarf, creeping rose, whose white petals are slightly splashed with red, while its stems are of a dull, bloody hue, which, even more than the flowers, recalls the day when the noblest chivalry of England, Yorkists and Lancastrians, White Rose and Red Rose lying piled together, fell in the snow and perished upon Towton Moor.

The Palace, Bishop's Thorpe.

CHAPTER III

HASLEWOOD, TADCASTER, YORK, AND BEVERLEY

I DO not know that any topographer need desire a nobler subject than is thrust in the way of those who wander round the Ainstie of York. The Ainstie, a name of which I do not see that any one can give a wholly satisfactory explanation, is the district lying between three rivers, the Aire, the Ouse, and the Nidd, and extending westwards as far as Otley, a region both fertile and picturesque, and including the domains of as many families of note as would provide lively material for more than one stout volume were their deeds and the romance of their exploits but adequately told. And to me who love the greatness of the past somewhat more than the achievements of our

own day, and dwell with higher pleasure on the story of a Knight of Malta than on that of a successful mill proprietor, it is a genuine embarrassment to find myself dragged by a sense of duty at high speed through this treasure-chamber of romance, where I would fain linger till I have despoiled it all. Would that I might loiter slowly by the banks of Wharfe! But how then should I see the coast and mountains of this vast province? From Beverley, from Flamborough, from Richmond, Barnard Castle, and the Dales, there come voices which call me on; but some leaves I will snatch from the laurels of this great district as I go by, if only to show how rich a harvest of stories, grave and gay, is to be reaped and garnered in the Ainstie.

When I stood upon the Field of Towton, I was no more than a short three miles from Haslewood, an ancient house where the great family of Vavasour have been settled since the Conquest. For many centuries no name stood higher than that of Vavasour in all the north country, and the little chapel which stands beside the house is a perpetual monument of this esteem, since it is said to have been the only one to which, in the days when the worship of Roman Catholics was proscribed, the privilege of celebrating mass was granted, and has been held without any interruption to the present day. The house stands nobly on a lofty ridge, a plain, squared building, having two shallow wings; and being left a little lonely and deserted, serves the better as a stimulant to the imagination, recalling a dozen stories of the noble family which owns it. But I will have none but merry ones to-day, for, indeed, the tales of slaughter which I have been telling, weigh a little heavily upon my mind, and therefore I set aside the baronial grandeur of this family, and take down from the shelves a certain cheerful publication over which the readers of three centuries ago were wont to laugh until they were both stiff and sore. Why should we not laugh where they did, for all the extra wisdom we have gained? The book is called "The Hundred Mery Talys," and among them is one of Mr. Justice Vavasour.

"There was a Justice but late in the reame of England, callyd Master Vavasour, a very homely man and rude of condycions, and lovyd never to spend mych money. Thys Master Vavasour rode on a time in his circuite in the northe countreye, where he had agreede with the Sheriff for a certain some of money for hys charges thorowe the Shyre, so that at every inn and lodgynge this Master Vavasour payd for hys own costes. It fortuned so that when he came to a certayn lodgynge, he commanded one Turpyn, hys servant, to se that he used good hosbondry, and to save such things as were left and to cary it wyth hym to serve at the next baytynge. Thys Turpin doynge by his Maystre's commaundement, toke the broken bred, broken mete, and all such thing that was left, and put it in the clothe sake. The wyf of the house perceiving that he toke all such fragments and vytayle with him that was left and put it in the clothe sake, she broughte up the podage that was left in the pot, and when Turpyn had turned hys bake a lytyl asyde, she pouryd the podage in the clothe sake, whych ran upon his robe of skarlet and other of his garmentys, and rayed them very evyll, that they were much hurt therwith. Thys Turpin sodeynly turnyng hym and seeing it, revyled the wyfe therfore, and ran to hys mayster and told hym what she had done; wherfore Mayster Vavasour incontinent callyd the wyf and seyd to her thus: 'Thou drab,' quod he, 'what hast thou don? Why hast thou poured the podage into my clothe sake, and marred my raiment and gere?' 'Oh, syr,' quod the wyfe, 'I know wel ye are a judge of the reame, and I perceive by yon your mind is to right and to have that is your owne: and your mynd is to have all thing with you that ye have paid for, both broken mete and other thynges that is left, and so it is reson that ye have, and therfore because your servant hath taken the broken mete and put it in your clothe sake, I have therein put the podage that he left, because ye have wel and truely payd for them.'" To this elaborately "Mery Tale," the moral is—What? One would never guess it, it is so recondite: "Here

ye may se that he that playeth the niggarde over mych, som tyme it torneth hym to hys owne losse." With which smug piece of mediaeval wisdom stored up safely in our minds, we lay aside this mediaeval jest book, and stop laughing with our ancestors.

What am I to say of Tadcaster, that old dull town with its many breweries and its lack of modern interest? I know it was a Roman station; but I cannot stay here to talk of camps and legions where there is scarce one relic to be seen, while at York, no more than nine miles away, every detail of the life of those old days lies realised and palpable before our eyes. I care naught for Calcaria when Eboracum is so near, and prefer to hasten onwards with what speed I may. But as I run out upon the high road, once so smooth and good, but now neglected to a degree not creditable to the local rulers, a few miles of jolting surface bring me in sight of an old grey building standing back across two fields upon the right, by which I cannot go without remark, not upon the building, interesting though it be, but on the family which built it and dwelt there for many a generation. Indeed it is not possible to go through the Ainstie without thinking of the family of Fairfax, whose great capacity and restless energy twined themselves so tightly in the history not of England only, but of other and more distant lands.

Not many years after Towton Field the first stones of that old house were laid by Sir Guy Fairfax, who supported the White Rose strenuously, and profited by his valour, laying the foundations of this branch family of Steeton, to whose fame his brother Nicholas contributed even more than he. For in those days when the English nobles, worn out and spent with fighting and proscriptions, settled down to a peace of utter lassitude and exhaustion, Nicholas Fairfax cast his eyes about to see in what quarter of the world he might find adventure, and saw his opportunity in the ceaseless hostilities of the Knights of Rhodes with the Grand Turk, who, scarce a genera-

tion earlier, had established himself at Constantinople, where he lingers yet, to the eternal shame of Christendom. There is no more gallant story in all history than that of the great deeds of the Knights of Rhodes. While all Europe dallied and applauded idly a courage which they dared not imitate, this handful of brave men held the outpost of Christianity, and grew grey in fighting manfully against crushing odds, till at length the Sultan Solyman attacked the island with a resistless force. While his countrymen were preparing for the final assault, Fra Niccolo Fairfax was sent to cut his way through the Turkish fleet in a small galley and bring back succour from Candia. It was a daring feat, but Fra Niccolo accomplished it and brought back reliefs. His skill and bravery could not change the final issue, for the small band of knights was overwhelmed at last, and retired to Candia in two great ships, of which Fairfax commanded one. Ah, valiant Fra Niccolo! had only ten thousand more been found in all Europe with thy spirit and thy passionate contempt for Moslems, how many penalties we should have been spared which we have now to pay for the cowardice of our ancestors and our own!

Well, Fra Niccolo's deeds must be read in Bosio; I cannot transcribe them here. Another Fairfax of this great family was with the Constable Bourbon at the sack of Rome in 1527, and could have told us of George Frundsberg and the motley gang of Lanzknechts who followed him in that bold dash across the Alps, and whether it was indeed the fact that Bourbon was slain by Benvenuto Cellini, as the cunning goldsmith boasts in his incomparable memoirs, and how much more which comes rushing on the mind at the mere mention of that awful disaster to Rome and Christendom. Wherever hard fighting was going on in those ages you will find the traces of a Fairfax; and if there be indeed records of all that members of that family wrought and saw, the world will some day receive a book such as it has rarely gloated over for its enjoyment.

I may very well talk about the Fairfaxes upon this road, which

truth to tell, owes any attraction it may possess to its associations, its surface being of the vilest possible, and, as every story, if it does not reach the end, should at least begin at the beginning, I will turn back to what was a very good beginning for Fairfax of Steeton, the day, that is to say, on which he carried off Isabel Thwaites from the clutches of the Abbess of Nun Appleton, which had closed on her with the peculiar grip which Mother Church reserved for heiresses. Had Isabel been no better than an heiress, Mother Church might possibly have maintained her hold. But she was beautiful to boot, and when one is seventeen, and beautiful, and it is spring time and the sap is rising, how can one not listen to the devil?

The devil was William Fairfax. He likewise was not old, and he had hot blood which called to Isabel and bade her heed him rather than the nuns. He came from Steeton, as I say, and Nun Appleton, where Lady Anne Langton, the Abbess, sat guard over Isabel the heiress, is scarce four miles away down over the hill near the banks of Wharfe. It is lamentably spoilt. One need not go to see it now. Four miles is not much; and moreover, Isabel was allowed to go out hunting. Fairfax hunted too, and was besides, a gentleman of birth and property. What more natural than that he should visit at the nunnery, where even the Cistercian rule permitted some intercourse with pupils who were rich? I daresay no harm was meant to Mother Church. Very likely half-a-dozen hot words spoken stealthily in the nuns' old garden did the mischief; the stubble was on fire in an instant; the Abbess raged, the maiden wept, and as for the hot-headed stripling who had caused the trouble, he tried fair words, but they failed; resorted to the law, but that failed, as it did very often when levelled at the Church; and then turned his hot head to what never fails, namely force, and came and carried off his bride. That must have been a pretty scene. Isabel was shut up in the church. I don't know how Fairfax got her out, but history tells us that no great while afterwards they were married at Bolton Percy, and there was scarce any

end to the riches which this stolen bride showered down upon the happy thief. No wonder that the lady Abbess fumed. It is long odds that she never had such a chance of wealth again. But it would have come to just the same thing in the end, and it is that which makes the story so instructive. For this Abbess lived to see the Dissolution, and to whom was the nunnery granted? Why, to the Fairfaxes, and it was to the son of William and Isabel that the old Abbess handed over all her keys. What a lesson on the folly of opposing fate!

It was from this marriage that those Fairfaxes sprang who were so great and terrible in the civil wars. I would there were more like them in these days, for England has need of servants who are not only faithful, but strong as well, and few there are who can put both qualities to the work which she has waiting for them. I know another story about Nun Appleton—the tale of one Sister Hilda, who was no better than she should be, who accordingly became a spectre, incurred the humiliation of being conjured by an archbishop, and disappeared at last in a crash of thunder together with an erring friar and a strong smell of sulphur, while the candles went out on the altar, and everybody was alarmed. But I really cannot stay to rake up these old scandals; for see, a turn of the road has brought in sight two noble towers standing side by side some three miles away, while at their base lies a crowd of buildings which can be no other than York. The first sight of that noble city drives out of my mind both erring nuns and their hot-headed lovers; and I hurry on my way scarce noting the pleasant houses of the suburb, or the green turf of the race-course, till I enter York itself beneath the massive arch of Micklegate, and stand in the narrow streets which still retain the aspect borne by them when the city was a fortress.

For York has never yet been modernised: our dull life has touched but not absorbed it. There are still the winding streets of ancient timbered houses nodding each towards the

HACKNEY

other, the old crumbling churches thrust out into the roadway and splitting it into two narrow lanes by which the traffic must filter onwards as it may. The small, quaint alleys winding to the river have not been improved away; the

Micklegate Bar, York.

pleasant gardens here and there about the walls are as green and fresh as when the Stuart Kings or their wild courtiers jested there on summer evenings; the ancient gates and bars can still be closed when the rulers of the city will; and best of all, the traveller of to-day may walk round nearly the whole

circuit of the walls and gaze forth still from the embrasures whence in old days the warders looked for the smoke of

York from the Wall.

beacons in the north, or watched some jaded rider spurring towards the city from Berwick or Carlisle.

These walls, once so formidable, are very quiet now; and you may pace up and down in solitude nearly all day long,

while the sun flickers through the trees and gardens of the Deanery, while the swallows wheel and skim around the Minster towers, and the sound of chanting reaches you across the sweet, keen, northern air. You will walk onwards and note the great height which the walls have had. You will mark the towers and bastions which strengthened them; and going further you will see the blackened keep of the ancient castle standing by the river's bank, grim and strong, a clear witness even yet to the fact that those who fortified York anticipated no child's play, but feared assaults against which the best defences they could rear were not a whit too much. So, gradually, the modern peaceful aspect of the city falls away, and one sees York as it was, the ancient military centre of all England, the bulwark of the realm against the constant peril of the north.

How shall we, who look on Scots as our fellow countrymen, understand what York and England thought of them? Here is an old document which tells us clearly; and I make no apology for quoting it, since no one can understand the part which York and Yorkshiremen played on the great field into which we are going without a knowledge of the mutual feeling between Scot and Englishman. "To all trew Cristen people this present wrytynge seyng, redyng or heryng, George th' Abbott of the Monastery of Our Lady of Alnewick, Sir Rauf Grey of Chelvingham in the Countie of Northumberland, Knyght, Sir Richard Brown, Vicar of Heddon . . . . . grettynge in our Lord God Everlastyng. Unto whom it apperteigneth due and humble recommendacioun. Be it known to your universities that whereas we be enformed yt oon Bartram Dawson of the Citie of York, drapour, is seynesterly defamed that he shulde be a Scottyshman borne, whereby he is grevously hurt in his name and goodes; and for so much as meretory and medful it is to record and testyfie ye truth in every matter duely required, that for the concelement thereof prejudice be not engenered to the innocent; we, therefore,

testifie and recorde yt the same Bartram Dawson was gotten and borne in the towne of Wardene in the Parishe of Bamburgh. . . . Wherfore we besech and desyre youe and yche oon of youe to admyt repute and take the said Bartram as an Ynglesman, not yeving credence to such defame and detraction. . . ."

Consider this document. It must have cost money. Knights and Abbots did not testify for the advantage of a draper out of sheer love of justice. Bartram must have paid heavily, and it is clear, therefore, that he wanted the document badly. Thus the suspicion of being a Scot had involved him in some serious trouble at the hands of his fellow townsmen, from which he could escape only by proving the suspicion groundless. In plain words, what this document shows us is the fierce and unquenchable hatred which burnt between Scotland and England in all the middle ages, and which in this proud old city, head and centre of the greatest of the six northern counties, never waned till the union of the two countries into one government took their occupation from the border raiders, and let the old feuds die away into oblivion. What it was that Bartram Dawson feared, or what had actually been done to him, I know not; but if he were thought by the townsmen to be a Scot, it is odds if he carried off his life in safety out of the ruin of his smoking shop. It would have been easy on any night in York to make up a mob of men who had seen the cruellest deeds wrought by the Black Moss-troopers, and who would have been glad enough to pay them out on the goods and body of a fat draper in the Skellgate. There will be more to say of the border warfare as we go through Yorkshire; for the waves of that great sea of troubles surged over the actual marches and broke again and again among the Yorkshire dales. For the time it is enough that we note the bitter hatred that existed; and remember the fact that the great mission of York from the first day when its low walls rose at the intersection of two streams was to keep a set watch northwards and to face the peril from the Scots.

Let us go on following the lanes that skirt the river's bank till we emerge at the garden of the Yorkshire Philosophical Society, a pleasant stretch of shady turf and winding gravel walks enclosing a group of ruins and remains which takes high rank even in Yorkshire for its beauty, and for wealth of human interest is unsurpassed. For here, cropping out upon a little knoll whence one looks forth upon the river and the swans which float down slowly on its silver stream, there is still a many-angled tower which formed one corner of the Roman walls. Now, to many of us in these days—I speak as one who is himself an ignoramus—the Roman occupation of these islands is a sort of fairy tale, the story of some temporary raid, some huge adventurous army which came and went, leaving about as much memory of its presence as the shadow of a summer cloud upon the earth. It is strange that we English, of all people, should think lightly of an occupation which was so like our own great task in India. Who has not heard from Anglo-Indians of the bitterness of the long separations which their life involves, of the continued craving for the sights and speech of home which assails a man whose days are passed in some lonely station on the plains, or how willingly even the highest rank and the greatest honour in that far, strange country are exchanged for the modest life of a private citizen at home? But these were the thoughts, these were the sorrows and pre-occupations of the Roman garrison at York. The sentinel who kept watch upon that old red tower, looking across the river and up the slope beyond, crowned with the baths and villas of his chiefs, while from the guard-room down below the songs and laughter of his comrades rang out clearly through the falling night, was thinking all the time of some vineyard on the Sabine Hills, or of some white walled town on the sunny coast of low Apulia, where the night fell how differently from the misty darkness of this cold northern land, and the stars came out warm and large and golden in the sky.

Do we ever think that this strange Roman occupation of our

land lasted longer than our own stay in India has been as yet? The sixth Roman legion, that one which, with a regimental pride worthy of our sympathy, wrote itself on every one of its inscriptions—"Leg. vi. Victrix"—was in garrison at York for full three hundred years. Think of it, as long a period as from the days of Queen Elizabeth unto our own! Is it not possible even now to catch the human interest of that long period of exile, to think of the men who ruled here in York neither as shadows nor abstractions, but as having like passions with ourselves, subject to the same griefs, and dominated by the self-same pride of race? It can be done by any one who will walk across the well-kept turf from the old, many-angled tower, till he reaches an ancient grey building near the water's edge, in which he will find stored as many relics of the Romans as will set his fancy working for many a day to come.

For there, in the silent rooms of this old building, lie not only the outward signs of the presence of the Romans on this ground, where they have been so long but half remembered, not only their statues and their mile-stones, their altars and the vessels of glass or pottery which served them for their daily use, but also their more intimate possessions, their ornaments and jewels, their rings, their bracelets and the armlets which their children wore. There are the trinkets of a Roman lady put together by the hands of those who loved her and laid beside her in her coffin, and there, too, are the childrens' toys, their whistles, their little messes of red paint, the scraps of glass and earthenware, with which they played hop-scotch, the shells they gathered at the seaside, and brought home to York as treasures. Do we not know how children love these trifles? All these, and many more, which childish fingers played with so many centuries ago as long as they had strength to hold them, and which, when the little lives which drooped and pined in the cold winters of this wild north land went out at last, were gathered all together at the end,

and slipped in beside the child so that it might still hold the things it cherished in its nightly sleep. Ah, how human it all is! Does this old world ever change at all in any of its realities? You go downstairs into the lower room and find the inscriptions which the officers and soldiers of the legion carved on the graves of their wives and children: "To the Gods, the Manes, to Simplicia Florentina, a most innocent child, who lived ten months; Felicius Simplex, her father, of the Sixth Legion Victorious, dedicated this." How suddenly the barrier of ages is swept away as one reads these old inscriptions! Eighteen centuries count as nothing, and out of the long darkness of the past Felicius, the soldier, stretches out towards us a hand which trembles with emotion.

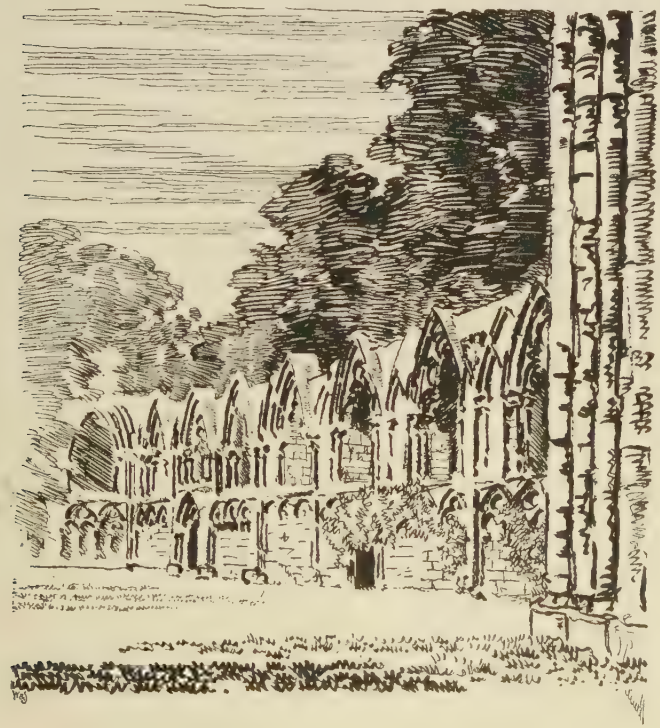
"Altera Roma," our second Rome, was the name which these proud conquerors bestowed on the noble city they had built as a military base and centre of the province of Britain, and stretching northwards from it they held a long chain of forts and stations set at easy intervals of marching up to the great wall which spanned the neck of the kingdom from Carlisle to Newcastle. Further off, again, there was a second wall; and within this double line the province slept securely, while the forces of the wild Picts spent themselves vainly outside the barrier. So here at York there grew up a rich and cultured life. The great plain which occupies all the level valley, cleaving Yorkshire like a gash from north to south, was dotted over with sumptuous houses and with pleasure gardens, while at Aldborough, some fifteen miles away, lay the summer villas of the officers, how stately, one may still see from the fragments lying in the cottage gardens. It was a luxurious and splendid life; and by rights there should have come down to our day a group of buildings which would have shown us Roman life upon its grandest side. But the dykes which fenced the Roman empire were growing leaky, the courage and resource of the great nation were sapped by luxury, the barbarians were stealing through the ill-kept watches on every side of the vast domain.

Rome had no longer strength for guarding Britain. She withdrew her soldiers, and what then remained in Britain? Why, the cultured life, the luxurious buildings, the outer shell of military organisation, without the sturdy courage and the manly qualities which had kept the wolves at bay so many generations. I may not stay to trace the progress of the tragedy. For a while the mere terror of the Roman name kept off the pirates from attacking the rich spoil for which they lusted. The fabric stood as yet, but it tottered, and men held their breath waiting for the crash of that mighty ruin. It came at last. The fierce northern pirates swarmed in on the second Rome; their axes went on hacking all through the streets of the noble city; the sky was blackened by the smoke of burning temples; and all through the plain the work of slaughter and of desolation was continued till the whole of that splendid civilisation lay buried underneath a pile of blood-stained ashes. Of the actual details of the slaughter we know next to nothing; but in a cave in the wild moorland, near the town of Settle, where dripping water falls continually from the roof in the semi-darkness, there have been found the bones of some of the poor fugitives, with the trifling articles which they could carry with them in their hurried flight. So there it ended, this great and costly Roman domination, which taught the people how to live in peace and cultivate the soil, which gave them plenty and prosperity and comfort in their daily life, and warded off from them the barbarians whom they feared. It ended in a race of terrified men, women, and children away from their crops and orchards in the fertile valley lands into a wet cranny of the rocks, where in cold and darkness, crouching in daily terror of discovery and murder, they dragged out the scenes of a tragedy as bitter as any that has happened in the whole history of the world. Meanwhile the pirates wasted all the country, and this is why we have so few evidences of what the Romans wrought in the fair land of York.

Come, we have said enough about the Romans, and have left ourselves no space to talk of all the stories usually told in the handbooks, of how the Emperor Severus died at York, and the greater Constantine was born there, and of St. Helen, the mother of that great ruler who, on very doubtful evidence, is set down as a Yorkshire woman, and has countless wells dedicated to her on that presumption. There is, too, that odd tale of how somebody groping under the church of St. Helen on the walls found, during the middle ages, a vault in which a lamp continually burnt, and recognised it as the tomb of the Emperor Constantius, to illustrate which pretty tale, Camden quotes the opinion of one Lazius, who held that the ancients had the art of reducing gold to "a consistent fluid"—whatever that may mean—by which they kept fire burning in vaults for a long time. They did, indeed, if this story may be relied on, for when the vault was opened the Emperor had been dead full twelve hundred years, and the lamp was still alight! I suppose the foolish fellow who found it put it out to demonstrate that he could do as much; otherwise we might ourselves have seen the wonder, and perhaps have even learnt this very useful art.

I cannot go away from this pretty garden without saying something of the ruined abbey of St. Mary, which stands on the highest part of the slope. "There are some," said Camden, manfully, "who take it ill that I have mentioned monasteries. I am sorry to hear it; but—not to give them any just offence—let 'em be angry if they will." If he can snap his fingers at his readers and write of monasteries as he will, I suppose that I may do so, too, and, therefore, I will walk across the grass and see the shattered ruins. Time would scarce have hurt the massive columns of this exquisite old abbey; storm and weather would but have touched the mouldings with an added grace, or lent a greater softness to the tendrils of the vine shoots that trail in the hollow at the head of every pillar, had not man, stupidest of all the animals, torn down wilfully the beauty which he was too

blind to care for. One may still see the wall and the splendid windows of the north aisle of the nave, and the huge group of clustered columns which supported the tower arch upon that



St. Mary's Abbey, York.

side—enough, perhaps, to enable any one who will sit down by the broken arch of the old west door, while the shadows steal across the sunny grass, and the birds hop confidently round the broken walls, to see again in fancy the grand church as it was, a

glorious witness to the strength of purpose with which men of old days followed their ideals.

There had been older monasteries in the north than this one dedicated to St. Mary, but the Danes, who wasted Yorkshire with fire and sword two hundred years before the Norman conquest destroyed all these, and left the country such a savage wilderness that, as the old chronicle tells us, "The country people never heard the name of a monk, and were frightened at the very habit." Into this pagan desert—for heathen creeds can be traced there even now, and the dead leaves of to-day must have been a mighty forest then—into this rank field of superstition and mistrust came a handful of Benedictine monks from Winchcombe, and its neighbour house of Evesham, eager to restore those ancient dwellings of their Order which had once fed the poor, and taught the children, and housed the traveller who came down at nightfall from the lonely moor. Some they restored, and this one they founded on a new site; and there they followed the mild rule of St. Benedict, losing, doubtless, something of its old simplicity as their wealth increased, made, perhaps, a little worldly by the doings of so great a city just outside their close, till at last their easy life was ruffled by the news that certain strangers from another land had found a rougher road to heaven, and straightway the hearts of a few brethren of St. Mary's leapt towards the new rule and they yearned to follow it.

It was not a wholly alien rule which was practised by the new comers, the Cistercian monks of Rievaulx, but one which professed, like the brethren of St. Mary's, to draw its inspiration from St. Benedict. Yet for that reason its stricter precepts were the more detested by the Benedictines, to whom they seemed, not only a personal reproach, but even an act of internal treachery, dividing their ancient household against itself. And so all Benedictines had been bitterly hostile to the disciples of St. Bernard for a full generation when the first of them came into Yorkshire, and the whispered rumours

of a life far holier than their own stole into the abbey of St. Mary.

And there those whispers stirred the hearts of two or three made of stronger fibre than their brethren, men who it may be had long wearied of their easy life and the light burden of their vows, and who now at last saw, as by a quick illumination, that for them the road to heaven did not lie along the level flat where they had been sauntering, but must be sought for in the wilderness, with suffering and labour, must be followed over rocks and stony ground, cold and fasting, taming the body with shrewd pangs so that the spirit might burn the brighter.

In those days such ideas once conceived did not perish, but rather spread from heart to heart as fire runs along the stubble. Ere long there were thirteen of the monks of St. Mary who could no longer rest in ease, and the Prior was among them. At length they told their story to the Abbot, an old man worn with years, who saw no way of rooting out the heresy save by sternness and by discipline.

Poor, perturbed, old Abbot! He had, perhaps, never seen souls in anguish for their salvation, and knew not how to deal with them. He threw the weight of his authority against them, and it did not count. He threatened them, and found they did not fear him. There was a great ferment in the Abbey.

One Churchman in great place in York was wiser than the Abbot—Turstan, the Archbishop, "one who loved all religion," says the Chronicler; and to him as to a man who cared for essentials more than forms, the prior told his story. It may be that Turstan recognised in the eager words something which human opposition could not quench; or, it may be that he caught at an opportunity of playing for his own hand in the constant strife between the Bishops and the Monasteries. At any rate, he promised his protection, and declared that he would visit the Abbey on an early day.

The day arrived—it was October 6th, 1132, an epoch in

the history of St. Mary's Abbey, and an epoch too in that of Yorkshire. Early in the morning Turstan came riding to the Abbey, and he, with his attendants, having left their horses at the gate-way, advanced towards the Chapter-house. On the very threshold their entrance was barred by the Lord Abbot, backed by a great crowd of angry monks, not only of St. Mary's, but from other monasteries also; and so supported, the Abbot demanded that Turstan should dismiss all his attendants and enter alone into that hostile gathering.

Now, if Turstan had come that day, as he declared, in a spirit of lenity and peace, he may very well have been pained by this exhibition of mistrust; and indeed, the passions which glared at him through the open door of the Chapter-house were hot enough to give pause to any prudent man. He pointed out that it was scarce reasonable to expect him to discuss affairs of consequence without the counsel of his friends; but he had hardly spoken when his words were drowned by a storm of shouts and hooting such as seemed—so Turstan said himself—to come rather of the riotousness of brawling drunkards than of the humility of holy men. The Chapter-house seethed with angry men; and those who were inside pressed out shaking their fists and vowing that they would go at once if the Archbishop's friends came in.

Turstan stood facing them in sheer amazement. At last the clamour dropped and the Archbishop spoke: "I take God to witness," he said, "that I came hither as a father, having no evil toward you in my heart, wishing nothing but peace and Christly brotherhood. But since ye try to strip my office of its authority, now I strip you for the time being of your functions. Your church is closed." In answer there came a defiant shout, "We care not if it be closed a hundred years," and the words were greeted with a roar of acquiescence from the maddened monks, while some cried, "Seize them! Seize them!" And others, laying hands on the Prior and his comrades, strove to drag them away to the prison cells. They

clung to the Archbishop, imploring aid from him and from St. Peter ; and, at length, Turstan and his friends tore away the rebels by main force, and carried them into the church, pursued up to the very door by a raging mob. There they sat, protector and protected, not without fear of violence even in the sacred building, till at last the storm died down and Turstan was able to carry off his friends in peace.

Such is the tale as it was told a whole life-time afterwards by a very aged monk of Kirkstall who, verging as he was upon his hundredth year, had seen the whole, and whose memory was still untouched by time. It was not solely for its interest, nor for the light it throws on monastery life, that I told this striking story. It is, indeed, no more than the first chapter of a story, for, from this great upstirring at St. Mary's, came the glorious Abbey of Fountains, through what toil and suffering I shall tell hereafter when I reach the lovely country in which that most noble ruin stands.

As I turn to leave this garden, which is to me one of the most interesting places in all England, the shadows are lying heavy on the grass, and the streets are hot and shadeless. It is long past noon, and with relief I seek the shadow and the cool aisles of the Cathedral, concerning whose great beauty I can never speak without a throbbing of the heart. For, indeed, York Minster is to me a place of dreams too exquisite and too impalpable to be set down in words. Let other and more phlegmatic men attempt in cold blood to analyse a building which is beautiful enough to be the gate of Heaven. I turn my memory back on all the hours I spent there, and can recall nothing but the flushes on the stone-work as the warm sun streamed red and golden through the ancient glass, or, falling down in one long, lofty beam from the topmost region of the clerestory, cast green flickering reflections on the worn stone pavement. It is to me a place of ancient pomps and ceremonies, of long streams of blue-gowned pilgrims kneel-

ing at the shrine of St. William, or venerating the relics of the murdered Archbishop Scrope, who wrought so many miracles after he passed out of this mortal world. Ah! how the ancient arches are steeped in memories of Kings and Cardinals, of the gorgeous processions of the Corpus Christi, or the quainter mummeries of the Boy Bishop, whom the choir boys chose each year from out of their own number to attend a great State service on the day of Holy Innocents. They are gone: all these splendid pageants have passed out of English life, and the echoes that ring through the lofty arches are those of a simpler and (if you will) a purer worship. But what remains to Yorkshiremen of the tradition of their Minster is the better part of all its magnificence,—the consciousness, I mean, that in every generation it has been the very heart of Yorkshire life, the full epitome of the best and worst which has befallen that great shire.

The air is cooler as I emerge from the great Cathedral into the picturesque old winding streets, and ride slowly and regretfully towards the bar that spans the road to Beverley, where I must be ere night falls. It is a dull road at first, and I am loth to turn my back on York. It were surely pleasanter to watch the twilight dropping down upon the clustered beauty of the great west front than it is to plough through the dust of this much travelled road, over which the last heat of a fierce June sun seems to scorch with twice the violence it had in York, and where scarce any shade of trees abates it. The undulating country has but little character; and I resign myself with some ill-temper to a ride which scarcely promises to be interesting.

Suddenly I am refreshed by a whiff of cooler air; and giving my attention once again to the scene around me, I perceive that on the east and south the land is sinking to a level plain which lies far in front of me without a hill, while, on the other hand, the higher ground has gathered itself into ridges on my left, where a line of low rounded summits falls by steep in-

clinations to the level pastures through which my road is winding. The sun is dropping low, and over all the fertile country there is shed a gold light which is infinitely soft and lovely. Sweet and steady, this rich glow lights up the bronze pastures and the cool woods which separate them, while from the red-roofed farm on the first rising of the hills it glows like a signal fire. Is this the country which I was told is dull and ugly?

The road runs on as if it were on velvet, bordered with fine oaks, from which the piping of the blackbirds grows louder and more continuous as the sultry afternoon gives way to cooler breezes. For over the face of the whole heat-stricken country a keen air is blowing softly from the sea, and every creature which has slumbered through the drowsy day wakes and turns its face to meet it. Here at Kexby is an ideal scene of peace. A little bridge carries the road over a sedgy stream, bordered with elder and hawthorn bushes in full bloom, and beyond them pollard willows, with here and there a patch of sprouting bulrushes. The stream coils away and is lost to sight among the level meadows, which stretch green and golden as far as a dim line of woods three miles off across the plain. Half a dozen red cattle are munching knee-deep in the buttercups, but there is no other sign of motion on the surface of the lonely country.

Such are the scenes which are presented at every turn of the long road to Market Weighton, a road which has no feature of strong interest, but which, on such a summer evening as this, is as pleasant as the most jaded traveller could wish. At the old town, which has such interest for archæologists, and so little for the ignorant, the road turns up over a spur of the chalk hills, from the first summit of which one sees the level plain lying stretched out far and wide, with scarce one undulation up to where its misty surface grows dim and indistinct in the soft distance. The setting sun throws silvery mists over the

wide flats, and far away upon the left, at some unseen change of light, there starts into sight a gleaming line of water, where the Humber, like a gash given by some enemy, cuts up into the heart of the country.

I might pause here and say much of the pirate boats which found so easy an entrance through that gash ; for, indeed, the muddy inlet of the Humber, too wide to blockade or protect in any manner known in ancient days, was a fatal weakness to the country, and many were the sorrows which entered by that gate. But it is growing dusk already, and I ride on, therefore, lurching now and then into one of the deep hollows which are characteristic of the roads across the wolds, till at length the highway drops down by a pretty red-built hall, through deep wooded banks, into the charming village of Bishop Burton, where a large pond lies on the green, and over it a fine church rises from the trees. There is but one more hill to climb, one more pleasant run along the ridge, and then a gate swung across the roadway is opened with alacrity by the keeper, and there is suddenly disclosed a view of charm so utter and bewildering, that as I looked on it for the first time in the soft twilight of that night in early summer, I wondered if sometimes the pilgrims who came chanting over the wolds in old days, footsore and weary, did not drop upon their knees as they topped this hill and came out upon the Westwood, and saw far down below the slender Minster towers, the goal of all their hopes and prayers, the full satisfaction of their toil and weariness.

Indeed, one needs not the simple faith of a mediæval pilgrim to be deeply stirred by the beauty of the scene. Far down below, at the foot of a green hill, the slender Minster towers stand up clear and sharp out of a mass of verdure and of silver blossom. For the wide fresh pastures on which the roadway has emerged, and which lie undulating like a sea into ridge and hollow as far as the eye can follow them on either

hand, are broken here and there by patches of very ancient hawthorn trees in blossom, whose gnarled and twisted trunks are old enough to have seen the pilgrims coming over this sweet down, or to have given a first shelter to the fugitives who were fleeing from justice to the sanctuary of St. John. Beyond the hawthorn trees an old red-roofed town lies along the foot of the incline, and just where the houses cease upon the left, the noble tower and octagonal turrets of St. Mary's Church complete the view. As I linger on the top of the hill the last glow of sunset fades, the feathery moon grows warm and luminous, and a single star hangs close above the trees, gaining brightness every instant. I go down over the short elastic turf, and at the foot of the hill pass into the town beneath an old red gateway, which admits me to a wide street and market place, full of silvery lights and shadows, while the bewildering richness of St. Mary's Church glows down upon me one moment as if it lived and moved, and the next is hidden as a sudden cloud sweeps across the moon. The streets are almost empty; only now and then a figure flits across the large moonlit spaces. The night is pervaded by a little wandering wind, which carries on its wings the sweetness of lilacs and of may from some old town garden, and stirs the blood with suggestions of warm summer. On such a night Beverley is of no age, or rather of all ages; and I look round among the heavy shadows of the houses half expecting to see a band of those north country minstrels who used to meet at Beverley out of all the country between Trent and Tweed on the Rogation days, making night melodious with their rebecks. But they are gone long since from Beverley, gone even from the memories of most who dwell there; and out of all the many-coloured pageants of the past,—knights, chanting pilgrims, or minstrels with their sweet-tuned instruments, no one has left more traces of itself than remains on the smooth surface of a pond, when the rings have died away which a fish made in leaping, save only the belief that every night Sir Jocelyn Percy drives a team of headless horses through the ancient

town, stopping always at a certain house where he wrought some foul and shameful deed. Is it not by this way that he comes? I would not meet him. And so I gain my inn, looking on St. Mary's Church, from out whose frosted richness the softest chimes steal all night long through my open window.

Beverley Gate.

CHAPTER IV

BEVERLEY, HULL, FLAMBOROUGH, FILEY AND SCARBOROUGH

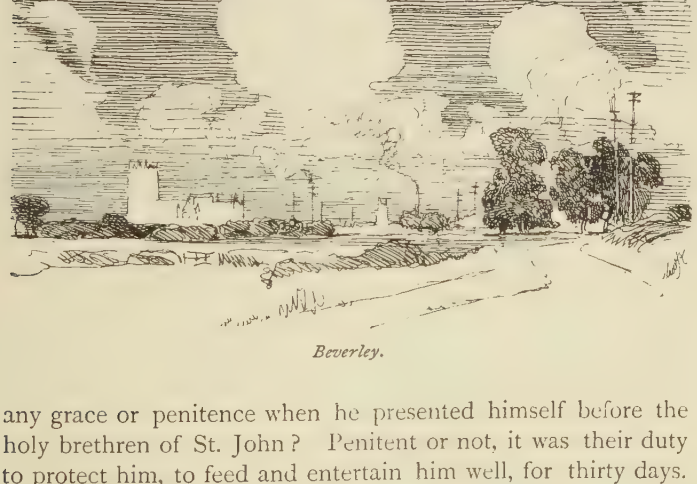
"SHAKE a bridle over the grave of a Yorkshireman," so says the ancient proverb, "and he will arise and steal a horse." I know not to whose wisdom we owe this curious reflection, nor whether it is indeed the case that the last sleep of a native of the county of broad acres may be so lightly broken. Certain it is, however, that horses, whether stolen or honestly acquired, are very much in evidence at Beverley, and as I stroll across the Westwood in the early morning, gaining an appetite from the keen breezes which blow up that way from the sea, I find a sufficient number of noble beasts cantering across the turf to set me wondering how far a man might be to blame if he did snatch up an unappropriated bridle, and slip it over the delicate head of any one of them which caught his fancy. "'Pon my life," sighed Major Monsoon, "I could never tell why temptations are put in our way unless it is for the pleasure of yielding to them." It is a simple creed. I fear that in old Yorkshire life there may have been some who held it. Long ago, in an old hotel in a midland county, where the landlord gratified a sporting taste by collecting any work of art which dealt with horses, or with pigs, for he combined both tastes. I saw a curious wooden panel, which the proud owner described to me as "The Yorkshire Coat of Arms." It was such a shocking slander that I hesitate to speak of it. Yet if people who are traduced do

not hear what is said of them, how can they rebut the scandal? Shall I not therefore act the part of friendship, and repeat it?

This scurrilous old panel was shaped in the form of a shield, and as crest it bore a horse proper, the signification of which was that Yorkshire is the best county in which any man can buy a horse—which I make no doubt is perfectly true. But mark what followed—Ah! had the artist but only ended there. The shield was in four quarters, adorned respectively with a fly, a flea, a limpet and a piece of beef, and these enigmatical devices mine host explained gleefully as follows. "A Yorkshireman," quoth he, "can drink like a fly, he can bite like a flea, he can stick fast like a limpet, and lastly, he is no good at all until he is hung." There,—it was not I who said it!—is it not shameful and atrocious? Will not every Yorkshireman desire to find and burn this panel? It was in Warwickshire that I saw it. Let those who list take that cue, and search diligently till they find it.

It is a cool morning, and the streets of Beverley are full of soft, sweet sunshine. I have come up to the top of the hill again to find the ancient cross that marked the outer limits of the sanctuary. For the kindness of St. John towards all criminals was not exercised only in his church, but extended for a full mile into the open country on every side; and evil men, however stained with blood, even if it were the blood of priests, could not be seized by their pursuers save under heavy penalties, if they once gained the shelter of the holy bounds. All criminals loved St. John of Beverley; debtors, murderers and thieves knew well the road across the wolds, and if in some parts of Yorkshire transgressors liked better to flee to the peace of St. Cuthbert of Durham, who was astonishingly potent in saving the lives of men who deserved to lose them, and who accommodated murderers at the rate of about four a year, yet over the Westwood men came constantly slinking through the dusk, or, speeding breathless from their pursuers, clung panting to the threshold of the sanctuary. How, one wonders, did the

monks receive these blood-stained fugitives who came knocking at their gate in the dead of night? Was there no repulsion from admitting to sit with them in the refectory some wretch who had but that day slain a fellow creature out of lust or passion? "William Hall, late of York, Tailour, on the feast of St. Andrew the Apostle, in the nineteenth year of the reign of King Henry the Seventh came and sought the peace of St. John of Beverley, for that he had slain his wife, Margaret Hall, and that peace was granted him." Did this scoundrel show



Beverley.

any grace or penitence when he presented himself before the holy brethren of St. John? Penitent or not, it was their duty to protect him, to feed and entertain him well, for thirty days. But then came the penalty, for the fugitives in sanctuary, though they escaped the ordinary law, were not relieved from punishment. Within forty days they were brought before the Coroner, and to him they confessed their crimes and abjured the realm. His officer thereon branded them on the brawny part of the thumb with the letter A, standing for the word

"Abjure," so that all men might know in what relation they stood henceforth to society. When that was done, the Coroner named a port to which the outcast should journey forthwith, and taking passage with what speed he might, should leave the country. If he found no passage over sea, he was bound each day to walk out knee-deep in the water, in proof of his goodwill to make the passage. All these were irksome penalties, but it was probably much more painful to be hanged, and so business was always brisk not only at Beverley, but at all other places where the privilege of sanctuary was maintained.

I fear I may be doing some injustice to St. John, and giving no true impression of his character, by speaking of his considerate treatment of the vicious before bringing him in person on the scene. The company of saints is apt to be esteemed a trifle tedious in these days,—a prejudice at which we cannot wholly wonder when we turn over the monkish chronicles and see how pointless and insipid their conversation reads. But let us in justice recollect that the charm of conversation is as evanescent as the colours on a bubble, and that few who snatch at the iridescent thing, succeed in carrying off more than the little smudge of soap from which it sprang. Perhaps even St. Cuthbert himself . . . but how I wander when I begin to talk of saints. Let me sit down here on the turf beneath the hawthorn blossoms, where I can look full upon the slender Minster towers which are sacred to St. John, and so will surely keep me to my text. Sitting here in the cool morning shade I could tell many stories about his holiness, but I will content myself with one which has the additional advantage of being about racing too.

Does any one know how old the sport of racing is in Yorkshire? I see that many of those who have writ thereon trifle with a matter of three or four centuries, fearing to plunge into the blackness of the past. But I, who do not pretend to have exhausted the antiquity of sport, leap back at one bound full twelve hundred years, and base myself on the high authority

of the Venerable Bede. For in the year of grace 685—so that renowned old author tells us—one Herebald, an excellent though light-minded man, who, sobering a little as his years advanced, presided creditably in the end over a monastery "at the mouth of the river Tyne," was living among the clergy of St. John of Beverley, not having, as he frankly owned, cured himself of a love for youthful pleasures. This levity of character had not escaped the keen vision of St. John, and so it happened that on a certain day, as the Saint and all his followers were riding together, they came to a plain and open road well suited for racing their horses. Now the vain young men who accompanied the Saint implored his leave to institute a race; but he refused, saying, truly enough, it was an idle request. I daresay he said it with a smile and with a yielding heart, for he too was a Yorkshireman, born at Harpham in the East Riding, and doubtless knew as much of horseflesh as any man among them. At any rate he did give way, but very properly excepted Herebald from the freak, and kept him by his side, perhaps to act as starter.

Now this was not to Herebald's mind, for he bestrode a nag as good as any one he saw about him; and having sat unwillingly beside St. John while his friends, with shouts and laughter, contested several heats, he could bear it no more, but gave his beast the spur and started off in chase, leaving the Saint alone. "Alas, how much you grieve me!" said the Saint, as he shot off, but not for such reproof did the reckless youth rein in. It was compulsion and not duty which brought him to a stand: for his horse, treading on a slimy stone, pitched him off, so that his thumb was broken and the suture of his skull was loosened, and he lay like one dead. He was carried home and lay speechless all that night, while his friends looked on him as but a lost sportsman, for they thought he could not live. Indeed, the Saint, who probably knew more upon this subject than any of the others, was so uncertain about it that, after having spent the night in prayer, he came up early in the

morning to ask what Herebald thought of it. "Can you live?" asked the Saint, doubtfully. "I may, through your prayers," suggested Herebald, and the answer seemed to please the Saint, for he at once asked several questions about the patient's baptism, and, finding that the manner thereof had been defective, he redressed the mischief, catechised the penitent, and then blew upon his face, on which Herebald found himself much better; and St. John, calling the surgeon, ordered him to close and bind the skull where it had been loosened. Then Herebald got up, and the next day was well enough to resume his travels with the Saint, cured, for the time at any rate, of his passion for the vain sport of racing. Ah! what subjects for his treatment the Saint might find over there behind me on the Westwood every year in the early days of June, would he but come to life again and walk up to the race-course.

Well, there is now in Beverley neither saint nor sanctuary; and never a pilgrim comes across the Westwood chanting in our day. Yet pilgrims come, though unmelodiously, and will always do so while they can see the lovely casket in which the men of old enshrined their faiths, and the red town lying at the foot of the breezy pastures, just as men saw it lie four hundred years ago and more. I come down slowly over the short turf, and enter the cheerful street under its old, red gate-way, and go by the pillared Market Cross until I come to the Minster, and pass in by the north-west door. I do not think that many men can have stood by the western door of Beverley and looked along the delicate vault of that most noble Church without drawing one deep breath of wonder and delight.

From Beverley it is but a little way to Hull, and I know of nothing that calls for mention by the road. Of Hull, what shall I say? What can any one say but the thieves' litany, well worn though it be—"From Hull, Hell, and Halifax, good Lord deliver us!" I do not wish to be profane, or even un-

Hull.

mindful of the great benefit which Yorkshire has derived from the trade of this black and ugly seaport, which turns to gold the sludge which was once churned up by the Danish pirate ships; and, indeed, it is but in the justice of things that this inlet of the Humber, through which came so many sorrows for those who dwelt in Yorkshire in old days, should make wealth and comfort for their modern representatives. Of all this, and much more of the same cast of wisdom, I remind myself as vigorously as I can in going round the mean and dirty streets; and yet it is of no use—I do not like Hull, and I wish that the trade were still at pretty Beverley, or even at Ravenspur, which is sunk beneath the sea. There was a time when Hull was jealous of the trade of Ravenspur, and feared the merchants who did business where the waves break white upon the shingle now—so curious have been the turns of fortune on this unstable coast. For the scour of the currents running south along the whole low coast from Flamborough to the mudbanks of the Humber is for ever washing stealthily away now one and now another bank; and were it not that on Spurn Head itself—which has no rock or even chalk wherewith to fend itself against the tide—the action of these currents is counteracted by other forces from within the estuary, the headland would long since have vanished, and Hull itself might have been a mere lost memory like Ravenspur, or Auburn further north, or many another town or village where the children's playgrounds are now open to the gambolling of crabs and starfish.

Now the land of Holderness—of which Beverley is the glory and Hull, I had almost said, the blot! but let me say rather the greatest proof of modern energy—is a pleasant one to travel through in early summer, when the woods are in fresh leaf, and the corn is springing, and the wind blows softly from the sea across the level flats. I turn my memory back on it and find it stored with pictures of rich fertile fields where the lush grass grew knee-deep beside some slowly flowing stream, where pollard willows made a little shelter from the sun, and the

golden growth of buttercups shot through all the field. Far away this wealth of gold and green lies stretching to the limits of the sight, while here and there the red roofs of some goodly farm gleam warm and homely in the sun, and a comely range of well-kept buildings by its side speaks of comfort and prosperity. All day I ride on through such sights. Sometimes I come out on the low seacoast, where a little range of bluffs, scarcely to be spoken of as cliffs, mark the windings of the shore—a lonely, solitary beach, given over largely to the gulls, who sit all day upon the shining sand in the first wash of the waves. Far away to northwards I see Flamborough lying like a cloud, and Hornsea, a little place growing out of all knowledge now, but which for many a century, until Hull people took the fancy of seeking sea-breezes there, was as lonely a little town as any one might desire to dwell in. In old days men did not unfrequently desire to dwell in lonely towns upon the shore, where they might practise in seclusion those ways of growing rich which the sea, great demoraliser of the human race, as it has been in all ages, cast freely in their way. Now I gather that the men of Holderness, who are nothing if not discreet and reticent, do not deny that there was a time in the long distant past when things were done at Hornsea which were not consonant to any but an easy view either of law or of morality. There were bad men in Hornsea once, but the whole of them turned right round and led converted lives in the year 1732, since which time not even a breath of slander has been heard against the town. It was a thunderstorm which wrought this marvel, and if the tales are true of the damage which it wrought, it must have been a portent as startling as that sent to terrify the reprobate who was sitting down in Lent to an *omelette au rhum*. "*Mon Dieu*," shrieked the poor sinner, pushing back his chair from the table on which the smoking dainty had just been uncovered, "*tout ce bruit pour une omelette au rhum!*" and he hurled the omelette out of window. Had the parish clerk of Hornsea known the

story of this judgment, it may be that he would not have used the crypt of the church to which he was unworthily attached as a receptacle for smuggled goods. But so he did, and on the night of the 23rd December, 1732—since it is a moral epoch, we may as well be particular about the date—on this night, I say, of the cheerful Christmas season, the vault of Hornsea Church was full of things which ought not to have been there. And there, too, was the parish clerk, gloating over the lace and hollands, and paying no heed whatever to the rising of a storm without, till the din of the wind and the crash of falling trees called his attention away from dreams of wealth, and bade him fix it on the preservation of his life, for the church was in the grip of the fiercest hurricane ever known along that coast. It rose from Hornsea Mere—as is said by men who tell the story still—and travelled seawards, stripping off the roofs of the vicarage and over twenty other houses. It threw down a windmill and carried the millstones across the fields full a hundred and fifty yards. The poor clerk, crouching in the church, heard the crashes which accompanied this ravage, and as the whole building shook and quivered under the furious buffets of the wind, he feared each moment that tower and arches must come crashing down upon him, since no work of human hands could endure beneath such violence. The great east window of the church came flying into the choir in fragments; and as the wind tore howling through the arches the wretched clerk fell back in a fit. When found next morning he was paralysed, and the neighbours, good sympathetic people, said it was a judgment, and added that there would have been no storm at all if the clerk had been more circumspect in his behaviour. This may or may not be a true view of the case, but at any rate it is claimed that the lesson was not thrown away, but was laid to heart by all those who dwelt in Hornsea; and that may be why I, who spent some time and labour in searching for indications of what had been going on in past years on this lonely coast, found so very little to reward me for my trouble.

For a long while ere reaching Hornsea I have lost the rounded chalk hills on my left, and have seen nothing but the wide green plain, as level as the sea itself. But I have not travelled far from the ancient town, with its large freshwater mere lying somewhat picturesquely near the very margin of the sea, when the hills begin to steal up again towards me, the plain shrinks to a narrow tongue of land, and once more I see nestling on the roots of the ridges the pretty church towers, and the clustering red roofs of the villages upon the wolds—for I have almost done with Holderness—that large strange expanse of fertile land which, in some far-distant days, the sea laid at the feet of the chalk hills, and withdrew and left it dry and fit for the habitations of mankind. The strangest impression of instability is left on the mind of one who rides quickly through this lush, flat country, catching sight from time to time of the line of hills inland. There, one thinks, is the true coast of the East Riding, and there it may be once again in the long future, when the sea has torn away the gift it gave—how many centuries ago!

As I draw near Bridlington I have little else to think of than the aspect of this hill country which juts out so boldly into the sea at the great headland of Flamborough. It was, and indeed is still, a strange, lonely district, abounding in traces of some long-vanished people who, in days before the dawn of history, scattered their camps and funeral mounds over every slope and valley of the hills. But not to stray into days so ancient, it is worth noting that this large district of the wolds was not enclosed until some sixty years ago. It formed till then no more than one large sheep-walk, and its scanty population were shepherds, formed into a society among themselves. Into this guild—if that term be really applicable—young men were not admitted till they could say by heart the Psalm in which the sweet singer of Israel sang that the Lord was his shepherd, Who made him walk beside still waters and through green pastures; while on the second Sunday after Easter, when the Gospel con-

tains another declaration, "I am the good Shepherd," these men, who found a simple pride in hearing their own occupation consecrated by such associations, came to church in their full numbers, so that the day was a kind of festival among them. There are fewer shepherds now among the chalk hills ; there is greater wealth there too, and the life has grown less simple. Yet the district still retains many ancient customs and ways of speech which are long forgotten in the more thickly-peopled country.

These wolds are rather curiously subject to great cloud-bursts, whence come floods that, sweeping down the deep hollows of the hills, have from time to time done much damage. Such a flood occurred at Langtoft, some seven or eight miles inland, in 1892, and as an illustration of the perils which hover at long intervals over these hill districts, the circumstances are worth noting, especially since the catastrophe was by no means unexampled. It was a Sunday afternoon, the 3rd July, and the morning had been hot and cloudless. As the day passed the sun went in, the breeze dropped, the air grew perfectly still and oppressive, and a heavy copper-coloured sky brooded over the surrounding country. Gradually this blight upon the heavens was seen to be gathering itself together into darker spots or clouds of very striking weight and blackness, and about the time of evening church these clouds began to travel rapidly across the sky in the direction of Langtoft, drooping more and more towards the earth, till, as they reached the hill above the village, there was a terrible crashing of thunder, the sudden lightning streamed over all the sky, the cloud tapered downwards in several twirling columns, the peaks broke, and the whole volume of water descended with furious violence on the hillside.

At the point where it struck the ground, a series of deep rents were torn through grass and chalk which resemble nothing so much as the devastation of an earthquake. From top to bottom of the hill, a full hundred yards, these great fissures lie,

attesting the mighty power of the water which went whirling down the valley six feet deep, sweeping away haystacks and cattle, sapping walls and houses, and putting the lives of many village people in the gravest peril. At the same moment there fell a shower of hail, and out of the black sky the thunder rolled continuously. It was an awful day, and none who passed through it can speak of their remembrances without some trace of terror, or recall the seething flood which rushed into their houses, without a shudder.

Bridlington Quay.

There is a noble church at Bridlington; but the eager tourist will find little else to please him, save a seafront which many people love, and which therefore no one ought to condemn hastily, a wide blue bay, which one may easily learn to love, especially when all the lucent surface is broken into white by the light winds of early summer, and a distant range of cliffs which change in colour all day long, now pearl grey, now gleaming white, and again standing out sharp, black and riven against the oncoming night.

I think few sights in Yorkshire are more striking than the abrupt termination of the low coast of Holderness in the massive chalk cliffs of Flamborough. Here is no slow or gradual elevation of the coast-line. The chalk turns out across the sand, the line of hills inland sweeps onward to the coast and plunges out to sea, forming a promontory so striking that it can in no age have been other than notable and famous. Indeed, had there been on either side of this huge barrier any creek or inlet which could have been enlarged by art into a safe or defensible harbour, we might have looked for the story of a great sea life upon this coast. But Filey is an open bay, and Bridlington no better than a fairly sheltered anchorage, on which, indeed, the energy of the sturdy Yorkshiremen constructed piers, doing their best, as their neighbours did at Scarborough, to make a harbour out of nothing. And doubtless they used their scanty chances well and boldly ; but the truth is, that from Hull to Whitby there is no natural harbour, nor was there at any time a fair chance of resisting those bold French and Flemish pirates who, in mediæval times, were constantly ravaging the narrow seas. "I have before sent a letter to the Privy Council," wrote Anthony Atkinson in 1599, "by the foot-post of Hull, concerning the Dunkirkers on this coast. Since then, four or five of our Hull ships have come home that have been ransacked of all they had . . . . They chase all the poor fishermen ashore, and those they take they strip naked. They put the whole country in fear about the Spurn Head and Flamborough."

The real grievance in this complaint was doubtless that, owing to their want of commodious ports, the men of Yorkshire could not make reprisals. They were but little subject to fear when they could strike in their defence ; but no man without a weapon in his hand cares to meet a well-armed enemy. Half a dozen fat Dunkirk merchantmen towed into Bridlington would have made a wondrous difference in the public feeling, and sent the youths of Holderness coursing the Channel as

boldly as any sea-wolves of Brittany or Cornwall. But, as it was, those lusty energies found small outlet on the sea; and the coast remained a lonely one, frequented by smugglers, and known as an apt spot for the landing of any persons who had reasons for wishing to be unseen. Thus, in the latter days of Queen Elizabeth, the Lord President of the Council of the North, watching, as was his duty, all solitary lines of coast on which Jesuits or other disturbers of the peace might land, apprehended three persons who had just arrived at Flamborough, namely, Father Walpole, the priest and Jesuit, his young brother, and a noted conspirator named Lingen. Whereupon one Richard Topcliffe, who seems to have been in attendance on the President, wrote to the Lord Keeper Puckering, to "signify how far they have digged into the hearts of these unnatural traitors." In truth, the Lord President, though labouring "with incredible toil, day and night, with assistance of his chaplain, a very mild divine," had digged no way at all into the hearts of the two men whose matured courage fitted them to meet him on equal terms; but with the undisciplined terrors of the lad he had been more successful. Poor boy, how could he withstand the fierce Lord President with the penalties of high treason at his elbow? "An amiable youth," Topcliffe says he was, "and not so far gone as the others . . . And all the truth, secret and matter, even against himself and the others, flowed from him as fast as his Lordship could put the questions . . . ." After the Lord President had examined them all, he sent the Jesuit and Lingen to rest; but to prove young Walpole's honesty, he sent him well guarded to the shore to see if he could find the place where he had buried twelve compromising letters which he carried. The bundle was found, though wet and soiled with rain, and brought to his Lordship who leaped for joy. After tenderly handling them before a fire, twenty-two were unfolded without blemish. . . . God thus blesses Her Majesty by discovering disloyal men and women about London and in sundry coun-

ties in England and Ireland; she will see what a toiling Lord President can do."

So it was worth while for Lord Presidents to watch this coast, and they caught strange fish upon it when they kept their eyes wide open. As for the Revenue Officers, who were a kind of modern decadent symbol of the Lord President's power, I do not fancy that they caught much, for the things they looked for were all of a kind that might be hid in caves, and remain there for months, if not for years, without much damage, while the chances of finding them, I should imagine, were practically nothing. There may be headlands elsewhere so perforated and tunnelled with labyrinthine caves as Flamborough, but I myself have never seen one; and if any one should say that there still lie kegs of hollands or good French brandy lost and forgotten in some hollow of the chalk, I should reply that I think it very probable.

It is on the northern face of Flamborough that the cliffs are loftiest, and as one trudges on from Bridlington, the rock faces, though high and sheer, have but little of the striking beauty of those which look to Scarborough and catch the full drift of the northern storms. But the air is golden as I walk over the short turf. It was hot upon the mainland, but here on this great bastion of chalk, over which the wind plays out of three of the four quarters, fresh and pungent from the North Sea, the heat is scattered and the sun does no more than flash gloriously on the undulating surges, catching now and then a quick gleam from the white breast of some sea bird that skims near the surface of the water. Far behind me, Bridlington begins to assume the aspect of an ocean city rising out of the sea, its towers and spires softened by a melting yellow haze, while the low coast of Holderness fades away dim and blue and distant, till I can no more distinguish it from the dull banks of cloud on the horizon. Here in the shelter of the headland, where half-a-dozen boats lie fishing on almost steady keels, the wind is no more than enough to blow the water into ruffles. But further out the

setting of the tide has brought rougher water, and as I gaze at the horizon, distinguishing now one and now another vessel which the haze concealed from any but a steady look, I see that all are pitching as if they had encountered heavy weather. Such, surely, may have been the aspect of the ocean on that August day—how many years ago !—when one, sitting on this headland, saw the galleys heave in sight which were bearing Mary Stuart from the kingdom of her bridal to the kingdom of her birth. "One of the galleys, being the greater, was all white, the other, coloured red, was well trimmed and appointed. She wore a white flag with the arms of France, and in her stern another white flag, glistening like silver."

That is by no means the only memorable sight which has been witnessed by watchers on this headland.

"You have heard of Paul Jones,
Have you not? Have you not?
And you've heard of Paul Jones,
Have you not?
He was a rogue and a vagabond,
Was he not? Was he not?"

Vagabond he may have been, but I am not disposed to give him any harder name. At any rate, he fought what is probably the most desperate naval action upon record, within full view of these white cliffs. It was a September evening in 1779, when Jones, in command of an American squadron of three ships, encountered a convoy of merchant vessels escorted by the *Serapis*, Captain Pearson, and the *Countess of Scarborough*. The convoy slipped into port; the *Countess of Scarborough* was taken after an hour's combat; but between Jones' ship, the *Bonhomme Richard*, and the *Serapis*, the fighting was as fierce and deadly as was ever seen upon the sea. The armament of the *Serapis* was superior, and had she been well handled she must have won; but by some blunder, Pearson allowed Jones to grapple him, and while the two ships lay locked together, a hand grenade thrown down the main

hatch of the *Serapis* exploded a great pile of ammunition, disabled many guns, and caused appalling slaughter. Still, both ships were so shattered that it was an open question which would strike first; and when Pearson hauled down his colours, the *Bonhomme Richard* was in a sinking state.

Here was a sight, indeed, for the fishermen of Flamborough! The North Landing, that small cove, which is, with one exception, the only place upon the headland accessible to boats, must have been seething with excitement, such as not even a smart chase by the Revenue men could have occasioned, when some lugger, with a guilty knowledge of what lay hidden in the wet caverns of the chalk cliffs, went flying out to sea with the exciseman's cutter hanging on her wake. What noble hiding places there are in those white precipices! What deep and intricate recesses, impossible of access save to those who know the exact locality of every sunken rock upon the coast!

As I go onward from the North Landing, following the rough, steep path which skirts the margin of the cliffs, I find myself climbing steadily though slowly, and indeed it is not until I reach the northern end of the Danes' Dyke that I have attained any great elevation above the sea. But from that point the chalk towers up into a majestic wall some three miles long, in which there is neither break nor inlet, nor any elevation falling much short of three hundred feet. The summit of the cliffs is an almost perfect solitude, their ledges are for the most part inaccessible except with ropes, and that is doubtless why they have been chosen by the sea birds as a breeding ground.

Here is a white cliff somewhat blackened by the weather, dropping sheer some hundred and fifty feet or more to where a grassy shoulder juts out for another fall. The precipice is roughened by myriads of little ledges, and at first one does not see what it is that stirs on the face of the inaccessible abyss, giving a perpetual appearance of slight motion to the solid rock. But presently some signal or alarm startles those who sit upon the ledges. There is a wild whirring caw, and instantly a

flight of thousands of birds wheels off the face of the cliff, flashing gloriously black and white in the sunny air. To and fro they wheel in crowds, coming and going in countless multitudes. Out beyond the shadow of the rocks their white breasts gleam like foam flakes on the water; yet, infinite as must be the number of those which sit there basking on the sea, you can none the less see them crowded close together, dark hooded and white breasted, on every ledge down all the vast height of the precipice, while here and there, if you look closely, you may distinguish a blue egg laid in some shady crevice of the cool white rock. There is a perpetual caw and chatter among the inmates of this huge abyss. Fighting and squabbling are incessant for the best places on the ledges. There comes a jackdaw sailing on steady pinion past one ledge after another, seeking vainly for a place where he may alight. The gulls will have none of him on their domain. At last he settles on a vacant space, but is pecked off with a wild, angry cawing, and sails away round the shoulder of the cliff spluttering in wrath.

As I go on towards the mainland again, the path winding in and out shows me every moment a new cliff face, roughened all down its vast height by the presence of these birds. If I sit down on the cliff top, where the chalk rises from below in high, tapering columns, I am not more than twenty yards from the ledges where the gulls sit crowded side by side; I can watch them lighting and taking wing, or waddling to and fro and stretching their long black necks towards each other. A little way beyond me a small wooden hut stands on the grass near the edge of the cliff, and while I am wondering idly with what object it was placed there, I see that four men have emerged from it, and are sauntering along towards me. One carries a coil of rope which he pitches down upon the grass just above the precipice which I have been watching; while one of his companions drives into the ground two pulley spikes, each carrying a wheel over which the rope will run with no risk of

chafing, placing one spike dexterously at the extreme edge of the cliff. Meantime another man has been slipping over his legs and fastening tightly round his body a kind of sling sufficient to support his weight with comfort, and when his equipment is complete all the others sit down on the grass, holding firmly to the rope, while the climber lets himself go confidently over the cliff edge, and swings down easily among the birds. Far down the cool shadow of the white rock he drops towards the blue sea below, pausing every now and then as his quick eye catches the blue gleaming of an egg, which he transfers deftly to a canvas wallet by his side. And now he has dropped as far as he desires, and the most difficult part of his journey begins, for in going down he swung almost free of the cliff face, descending easily as the men above paid out the rope. But coming up strains every muscle in his agile, well-knit frame, and as he strikes out with his legs, catching now one and now another shelf of rock, on each of which his weight hangs for the fraction of an instant, the tension of his muscles is evident enough, and one realises in watching him how great must be the strength and the agility needed to accomplish the ascent. Seven eggs rewarded the bold climber, and as I moved away another man was about to try his luck.

A mile or so beyond this point the chalk dips inland suddenly, and the precipices end in low bluffs of red marl. I stand on the sweet turf in sight of the last cliff and look out across a lovely bay, towards which the sunny country falls gently from the wolds far away upon the sky line. It is all soft and beautiful in the warm summer glow. The blue sea washes in, white and broken, on the chalky strand. The red bluffs gleam, and down below an old wreck lies black and solitary amid the breakers. Far away, the little town of Filey stands low upon the curving strand ; and further off again, at the extremity of the redder cliff which terminates the bay, the sea is foaming white and mountainous over the deadly Brig. Far out under

the discoloured sea that perilous reef projects, stabbing like a swordfish snout every solid thing that the waves wash up within its reach. From the buoy which lies tumbling just where the sea grows blue again, the tolling of a heavy bell just reaches my ear, a dull warning note carried over miles of water, while the Castle Rock at Scarborough closes in a noble sea view, standing up grim and solid above the pearly haze.

I conceive that few of those who visit Filey have any expectations of finding beauty on the land. It is as well; for, indeed, there is but a bare landscape, look where one will over the swelling country. The last undulations of the wolds are by no means picturesque, and it is the more fortunate, therefore, that the sea views are of rather striking beauty. I will not plunge into that great quarrel which rages still upon the question whether Filey was not the "well havened bay" known to the old Greek geographer Ptolemy; in fact, I should like it neither more nor less were it proved that half the ancient world—Greek, Persians, or they of Babylon itself—thought well of it. For me, it is enough that on this warm summer afternoon the whole bay has the colour of one translucent beryl. The town lies in shadow. The great precipices by which I came this morning tower grey and black in the far distance. The wind blows freshly out of a sunny sky; and over the scattered boulders of the Brig, that singular reef where the chafing waters never slumber, but are torn perpetually into foam, the sea breaks green and white, flashing now and then into a dazzling jet of spray, cool and translucent. Further out the colour changes every moment; now it is a soft green, and now a softer blue, and now a mere steely shimmer, as the sun shines out more brightly, turning the brown seaweed into gold by the brilliance of its wet reflection. Far away upon the left stretches a fine range of sheer dark headlands, and further off, again, a craggy point rises over a mass of houses which can be no other than the ancient town of Scarborough.

Come, let us go forward on our long road. For the charm of Filey is not one admitting of exact description. It depends upon no singularities of beauty or of interest; but rather on the memory of long, quiet days spent strolling on the breezy cliffs, where the wind at evening comes in from the North Sea with a freshness that whips the colour into one's face after the hottest day. Simple pleasures, such as are the most fragrant to remember, are still the hardest to describe; and those alone are found at Filey. I turn up through the wooded road known as the Ravine. It is the first of many such which gash the coast line throughout all its length as far as where the hill country drops at last to insignificance again, and the Tees, spent and wearied by its long course over moors and fells, creeps out to sea between the flats of Middlesbrough.

We shall travel many a mile before finding level ground again; but, for my part, I do not complain of that, since in toiling up the rough hills that lie between Filey and Scarborough, I am refreshed by the cool breeze that rises as the sun falls lower, and enticed onwards by constant glimpses of the Castle Rock, which comes and goes from sight again as the level of the road changes. At last I gain the town, and turning to the right I come out upon the South Cliff, and see the Castle towering before me on its huge green crag, while the blue sea washes round its base, and in a sheltered hollow at its foot lies an ancient, red-roofed town, nestled into the warmest corner of the hill. Two curving piers enclose a little harbour, and towards its mouth half-a-dozen brown-sailed boats are slipping through the oily sea, each one leaving a wide track that grows grey in the fading light. The beach, which curves round towards me from the town, is crowded still with people. Far out the sea is stained red by the setting sun. At the bottom of the cliff beneath my feet a lighted lamp gleams brightly out across the water; and the strains of some pretty waltz are blown upwards by the gentle wind. It is a perfect summer

evening ; so still that the ripple of the waves is clearly audible, and the shouts of children climbing on the Castle Hill ring plainly through the clear air. But the night is falling fast. One by one the visitors go home. The light below me is put out. The band is silent. The lamps on the pier-head cast a red reflection on the sea ; and overhead the stars shine out soft and luminous in the warm sky.

CHAPTER V

HELMSLEY, RIEVAULX, BYLAND

When a town has given itself to pleasure so utterly as Scarborough, how shall it find those who will listen with patience to its history? What care they who haunt the Spa and the Aquarium, or take pleasure in the gildings of the Grand Hotel,—what care have they, I ask, for the stories I could tell them of the lighted brands which the Danes hurled down from the captured castle on the doomed town below, or of the many sieges which the old fortress stood, and the tales of woe and daring which have gathered round it? "How came priests and bishops," demanded Corporal Trim, "to trouble their heads about gunpowder?" "God knows," said my Uncle Toby; "His providence brings good out of everything." In such words, with the same tolerant contempt, will the votary of Scarborough reply when asked questions concerning what went on there in past days.

"God knows." Even out of those dull old times His providence has produced these restaurants and bands! What matters it that from the Castle Crag a great voice calls for notice down all the empty centuries? Let it go on calling, while we eat our oysters and sip our lager beer.

Well, let it be so, then. All my ancient history shall be tossed into the dustbin. But one yarn among the number is very fit to be told in the pauses of the band; and surely the

Scarborough.

most gay-hearted tourist will be pleased to hear how the Mayor of Scarborough was tossed in a blanket.

It all happened so long ago that nobody need be concerned at the propagation of the scandal. King James II. was at the bottom of it all, as he was the author of most of the mischief done in his brief and miserable reign. It is well known how he spent his ingenuity in trying to favour the Roman Catholic religion, and how, when he could achieve that end in no other way, he tried to reach it by a decree of freedom for all religions, which decree he ordered to be read in every church throughout the realm. Now the Mayor of Scarborough received a copy of this precious document, and, as in duty bound, sent it to the rector of the parish, with a transcript of His Majesty's commands, making no doubt that he would loyally obey them. But the parson was a sturdy Protestant, and smelt a Popish rat even under the roses of universal tolerance. I know not in what terms he conveyed to Mr. Mayor that he would not read the decree, but whether sour or deferential, they annoyed the Mayor, who went to church next day vowing that if the orders of the King were not obeyed, he would do a deed that should be remembered in the town of Scarborough. So quickly does the civic spirit rise to the level of heroic actions! And the Mayor's threatenings were by no means froth and vapour. They were the ordered warnings of a resolute temper, prompt to vindicate the slighted authority to him entrusted by the citizens; and accordingly, when he heard the appointed portion of the service read without any mention of the decree, Mr. Mayor sallied forth from his pew, where he sat in state among the Aldermen, walked up the aisle with great dignity in the face of the astonished congregation, and then and there, in the most public way, caned the minister in his own pulpit.

Here, surely, is a man who ought not to be forgotten by posterity. Imagination reels in trying to depict the scene when Mr. Mayor, casting down the culprit on the ground, walked back, flushed and majestic, clothed in all the dignity of the law,

[*To face page* 97.

"*On the Bowling Green.*"

and begged that the service might proceed. But not every one has the calmness of a Mayor, and I surmise that neither castigated minister nor startled congregation paid much more attention to their devotions. Next day Scarborough was still seething with excitement. On the old bowling green, where a gentleman, vaguely described as "a captain in the army," was trying to explain to a group of friends the precise meaning to be attached to the term "brawling in church," the feeling grew so warm that they decided to send for Mr. Mayor to explain it to them. That dignitary was unwise enough to disregard a courteous summons. So they repeated it by a file of musketeers, who brought back the Mayor, willy nilly. I know not in what terms he rebuked them for their presumption in handling the chief magistrate of Scarborough roughly; nor do I think the wags on the old bowling green gave him much time for spouting, for somebody had brought a blanket out, and somebody stood at each of the four corners, and somebody tripped up Mr. Mayor's heels and upset him with all his dignity into the bosom of the blanket, and somebody gave a hoist with lusty goodwill, and sent Mr. Mayor up to the stars and down again, and bumped him on the turf, and shot him up again to heaven, and rolled him over and spun him about, till he felt that all his inmost parts . . . . Ah! who does not yet recall the sensations he went through when six strong boys tossed him in the dormitory? Just so they treated Mr. Mayor, and if I know anything of mankind, I think when he came out of the blanket he must have been rather angry.

There was but one quarter in which the monstrous nature of this outrage could be represented properly, and accordingly the Mayor set out for London to complain to the King, not doubting that his Majesty would be distressed out of measure on hearing what troubles had befallen a faithful servant who tried only to execute his will. But let men beware how they count on the support of kings. The Captain rode to London hard on his adversary's heels, and by dint of influence, or the power

of the purse, or the prevailing force of merriment, which set the whole town laughing at the cost of the Mayor, got the matter settled all his own way. So when at last the Mayor had a chance of stating his sorrows before the Council, it was but to hear the captain's pardon read, and to be dismissed to muse on the uselessness of trying to do one's duty in a corrupt and naughty world.

There is a sharp whistle in the wind this morning, and the sea is breaking heavily round the harbour walls. From time to time a surge heavier than the rest sends a cloud of brown spray flying over the wharves and quays where the fishing crates are stored, and as I watch, a drift of flaky foam torn from the crests of the grey breakers whips past the red roofs of the old town and is driven slowly by the wind across the green slopes of the Castle crag. As far as the dim skyline, where the stormy clouds hang down and touch the tossing waters, there is nothing but a wilderness of grey and angry sea; but out of the torn sky, coming I scarcely know from whence, a gleam of sunshine falls upon the blackened Castle ruin, so that its shattered walls begin to glow with a warm light which spreads and widens till with a sudden burst of splendour the sun is shining over all the hill, and the plumage of the seagulls wheeling up and down the cliff flashes nobly under the dark sky. It is thus that I love to think of Scarborough, that stern and blackened ruin which has tasted of the worst that Time can do, and still faces the storms of the North Sea as if it looked yet for the coming of the Danish pirate boats. It is a typical north-country view, a little grim, a trifle lacking in that colour which wins so many hearts for the softer west, but an outlook full of grandeur and of strong romance, one of those prospects whose very memory sends a certain throbbing through the heart, like the first sight of the Abbey on the cliff at Whitby, or the hoary battlements of Bamborough darkened by the beating of a thousand winter storms.

Now I have said already that from Flamborough until one

comes in sight of Tees there lies a country of unbroken hill and moor, intersected only by deep gorges or ravines, which for the most part are exquisitely wooded, and occupied by streams as beautiful as the heart of man could wish. For when the rain clouds which drift above the moors have caught and broken on the summits, and their stores of water come rushing down the wooded clefts, each one of them has its noisy waterfall and its brown foamy pools under the shade of trees, so that the sound of water is never lost through all the stillness of the dell till it is overpowered by the murmurs of the sea chafing on the rough coast to which the stream is hurrying down. All these narrow valleys are worth seeing, and indeed a man might spend many days in loitering through Hackness and Hayburn Wyke, or climbing the great peak of Ravenscar till he sees the wide red curve of Robin Hood's Bay lying far below him, and the small red town crushed all together on the further cliff. There is always a choice of ways in this noble county; but I, who do not find the romance of Yorkshire, nor even its most striking beauty, on the coast, will turn westward through the wide arm of level ground which the central vale of York projects to the sea at Scarborough.

It is a long road and a dull one; for the great plain extends so far that the barrier of the Cleveland hills in the distance on my right seems scarcely loftier than the low ridges under which I travel on the other hand. It is a scene which possesses a certain wild freshness, but is lacking in dignity and interest. I pass it by as quickly as I may, running on through Sherburn and Rillington, and that somewhat dull old town of Malton on the Derwent, where I might doubtless discover things of interest had I time to stay and search for them. Does not William of Newburgh in point of fact . . . but indeed the worthy William himself, who loved this country well when he walked about it in the flesh, would not have stayed me at this moment to inflict his prolix stories on me. He would assuredly

have put aside his anecdotes with one wave of his canonical hand, and bid me stretch my eyes across the wide level to the distant blue line of the hills sweeping steadily towards me, or watch the crimson poppies glancing by among the wheat fields, or look out for the ivy-clad castle of Slingsby, less a fortress than a Tudor dwelling house, which would have served the worthy Canon as a text on which to preach to me of the grandeur and vast strength of the barons who fixed their dwellings in this fertile valley land, of the pomps and tragedies which sprang out of their stormy lives. For my part I lend a willing ear to the tale of all this long-past splendour, prolix though it be; yet I know there lies among the hills not so very far before me a place of which I shall have to say so much, that I am warned to save my breath until I come to it; and therefore, as I ride on through the pleasant country, I will mention only the remarkable fact that on the road from Slingsby to Hovingham, which pleasant byway I am now following, there dwelt long ages since a monstrous snake, no less than a mile in length. It occupied a cave by the wayside, and issuing therefrom at such seasons as it pleased, occupied itself in devouring not only the crops of the peasantry, but even their children and themselves, so that in the end it became a quite intolerable pest, and one Marmaduke Wyvill of Slingsby Hall vowed that he would destroy it. I know not how he did the deed, and it is as well, for the details were doubtless very gory. At any rate he lies now all carved in stone in the church at Osgodby, with his dog who helped him bravely; and the whole story serves to set on foot some speculation as to whether any spark of truth may lie in the tales of dragons which occur at half-a-dozen places in the northern counties; whether any vestiges of a race of Saurians such as roamed these islands in older geologic ages did in fact remain here and there in the swamps and caves of solitary districts, and linger on, strange and terrible survivals of extinct worlds, until a period late enough to touch the roots of traditions which are living yet.

It is a curious question, if an idle one, but while we have been talking of it, all the face of the country through which we are running has been changed. The plain has gone, and the road is carrying us into the first valleys which pierce the slopes of the Cleveland hills. Helmsley lies but a little way before us, and the grey old stonework, glinting through the trees upon the left, is the ancient castle which we must turn aside to see, not only for the beauty of its site, but for the grandeur of its associations. For hither George Villiers, duke of Buckingham, "that life of pleasure and that soul of whim," brought down the dissolute Court life of the Restoration, and through this gateway he rode out on the hunting expedition which brought him to his end at Kirby Moorside. He it was who repaired the walls left shattered by the cannon of Sir Thomas Fairfax, who marched hither after Marston, and got a bullet in his shoulder for his pains; and, indeed, about these mounds and ridges, where the trees are now the last invaders, planting their green banners on the very walls, there has been much fighting since the Norman barons of Espec and De Ros built them as a stronghold, whence Scotch raiders might be held in check ere they reached the fertile valley lands of York and Mowbray.

De Ros is long forgotten in this district, but the name of Espec is still on the mouth of every visitor, kept there by the magic of a pitiful tale told of the loss of his only son, killed by falling from his horse, and of a vow made by the heart-broken father that, having no heirs, he would endow Christ with his goods. Alas! the pretty story is not true, for Espec had no son, and though he founded Kirkham Priory and the great abbey of Rievaulx here close at hand, he did it out of other motives not a whit less noble than the desire to perpetuate the memory of a broken heart. Come, let us go and see what it was that this great baron did; and that we may realise the better all the nature of the country, we will not take the pleasant road through the woods of Duncombe Park, but pass

HACKNEY

on through the wide square of the little town of Helmsley, and climb the hill till we see the black moors thrusting up their heads on every side above the woods and fields. Sharp and sudden these huge slopes sweep down into narrow valleys; for this, the eastward corner of the Hambleton Hills, is an intricate network of deep hollows, fringed with woods and musical with running streams. And down each one of these winding vales there sings the fresh wind of the moors, keen and stimulating, carrying the scents of gorse and heather into the denser air of the low bottoms, so that each one of them is bright and breezy, and the thick shadows flung across the streamlets by the woods are continually shaken.

As the road drops down towards this broken country, a small gate upon the left admits me to a little wood. I pull the bell, and there comes to meet me one who takes a shilling, and leads me through the trees out on what I conceive to be the noblest stretch of turf in England. In full view of the valley curving round beneath the hill in the direction whence I came, far, broad and level, this glorious green sward extends along the hillside, winding as the valley does, soft and springy to the tread like the turf of a sea cliff, and sweet as that is with wild thyme and vetches, and numberless small creeping flowers. This green mead is bathed in the softest golden sunshine up to the very borders of the heavy woods that bound it on the left, while on the right a scrub of bushes falls with a swift descent into the deep valley.

Over this fringe of coppice one looks down upon the narrow meadows of the bottom, drowsing green and gold in the shadow of the trees and hills, and, set among these sweet pastures like a lovely jewel, stand the grey ruins of the ancient Abbey. It is late afternoon, and the valley brims up with golden light, the old broken vaults and arches gleam, and over the hill-top one or two sharp crumpled peaks thrust themselves up against the sky, the broken summits of the Hambledons.

I doubt if all the hills and vales of England can show another

scene of such wild and solitary beauty. One may sit all day upon the hillside even now, seeing no sight but the changing of the shadows or the trooping of the deer over the wide hill pastures; hearing no sound but the murmurs of the wind and water just as the monks heard them long ago. And if one sits and ponders thus, suddenly it becomes clear how vast a courage and how strong a faith must have been needed to set the first walls of the Monastery in this lovely hollow, in an age when the gaunt moors all around were haunted by outlaws, and lay open to the raiding Scots, and when the bonds of society in this northern land, shattered by successive invasions of the Danes, had been torn up root and branch by the ruthless vengeance of the Conqueror. There was worse than solitude among these mountains then, and the perils which the monks came out to face were exactly those which beset a colonist to-day in a wild, unsettled land.

Well, they faced these perils—a poor handful of Cistercian monks, coming with the blessing of St. Bernard to live the new life of stern and abstinent labour among the lax monasticism of the English Benedictines. They came to testify, and did it nobly, in this lonely valley; so that we have seen already how the spark ran from their hearts to those of a few who dwelt in luxury at York, and lit a fire in which tools were forged which wrought a mighty work for the welfare of this country, as well as for the profit of the Church of Rome. It was Archbishop Turstin to whom St. Bernard sent them, and he commended them to Walter Espec, who gave them land and some small revenues with which they held their ground, we know not with what suffering, though we can guess it was as bitter as the cold and hunger which tortured the monks of Fountains only a few years later.

Day by day they saw the sun break over the black moors or heard the storm wind singing over the rough snow, while their buildings rose fair and stately in the wilderness, till at length the valley was no longer dark or silent; and the lost traveller who

came stumbling over the highlands to the brow of the Rye Vales looked down on white-robed monks toiling actively upon their fields, or saw the darkness of the evening pierced by beams of warm light from the windows of the church, heard the sound of chanting on the still air, and pressed forward with renewed strength till he knocked at the fair gateway and was admitted by a brother, who fell on his knees, as was the rule with the

Rievaulx Abbey.

Cistercians, and thanked God for sending a weary stranger to rest within their gates.

The seed was sown by St. Bernard of Clairvaulx, the tillage came from the hands of nameless monks; but the plot of ground, without which the other labour would have been but fruitless, was given by the great baron, Walter Espec, an old man, full of days, but keen of wit, huge of stature, noted in that he never broke troth with a friend nor faith to his King. He had yet a splendid service to perform of which I shall say more presently; but it may be that as he watched the monks

of Rievaulx making the wilderness to blossom like a rose, that thirst for peace, which had so strange an empire over all men in his day, grew strong within him, for in the end he cast off his harness and put on the white robes, and was carried to his rest at length within the Abbey Church. There his dust lies among the shapeless mounds to which the greater part of the noble building is reduced, but his memory is more lasting than the stone.

Come, let us go into the valley. A broken, winding path descends through the steep woods into a lane which ends in a tiny hamlet, built on the abbey precinct. Just beyond it are the ruins, the nave no better than a string of mounds which no one has cared to dig out ; the transepts fairly perfect, the lovely choir lacking little but the springing of the roof to restore it to its former state. Apparently there are few who love or care for this exquisite fragment of a noble building. Overgrown with nettles and briars, defiled by cows, the Abbey of Rievaulx stands a bitter impeachment of our title to impugn carelessness in other nations towards their ancient monuments.

I would have every one who visits Rievaulx go down the hill from the little hamlet, and, passing by the pretty rose-clad cottages and the gardens full of stocks and peonies, cross the river by an old stone bridge, just where a mill leat rushes down to join the main channel of the stream. It is the bridle road to Coxwold which runs up the hillside from this bridge ; and after following it for some distance one may turn off by a gate at a keeper's cottage on the left, and trudge up through a rough lane ending in a wood, where the hillside is gashed with deep valleys of fern and shady coppice. As one mounts upwards by the rugged path, under the scrub of oaks and beeches, one is drawn continually to stop and turn, so exquisite are the gradual unfoldings of the valley depths. One moment it is no more than the mill-house which one sees against the shoulder of the green hill, the next turn brings in sight a corner of the grey ruins gleaming over the fresh grass ; and a further climb throws open the whole depth of the valley bottom, a sea of verdure

filled with golden light, so still that one can hear the river running over stones below, while the grey ruin stands up solemnly in the middle of the valley.

Just so, one thinks, so perfect and so beautiful, it may have looked on that still evening long ago when a monk who had travelled all day stood upon this hillside and gazed down into the valley. He had wearied of the strict rule of the abbey where he dwelt; had grown restive under the hard labour and the silence and the nightly penance in the church, and had slipped away ere dawn and gone out beyond the abbey bounds, which no monk might do, and sped away into the woods like a bird escaping from its cage. And so he wandered till the sun sank, and the taste of freedom grew bitter in his mouth; and at last, not knowing where he was, he came out on the hillside, and saw a fair abbey glowing in the evening sun, and heard the bell chiming for vespers, and went down and knocked at the gate with a beating heart, and, lo! it was his own Abbey of Rievaulx to which God had brought him, and his own home which received him back into its peace again.

I turn once more before losing sight of the old grey building, where so many lofty ideals lie crushed beneath the crumbling stone; and the memory comes back to me of an autumn day near six centuries ago, when this quiet valley resounded with the tramp of soldiery and the broken pomps of a hastily retreating army. For King Edward II., that weak and luckless monarch, had invaded Scotland, hoping to emulate the glories by which his father had bound the restless northern baronage to himself; but, lacking his father's wit, and it may be his father's courage also, had been driven back, and was retreating through this land with shame and danger. For the Scots, triumphant and merciless, were pressing hard upon his heels; and as the beaten King lay hidden in these hills at Rievaulx—so the Chronicle of Lanercost tells the tale—he could almost hear the din of shouts and slaughter which the kerns were wreaking on the fertile country, and could see

drifting black across the sky the smoke of homesteads which it was his mission to protect. The King was of a timid heart, and sent out the Count of Richmond, Don John of Brittany, to feel for the enemy, which proved to be a very easy task, for Don John had no sooner mounted a hill within the Abbey precinct—it may have been this very one on which I stand—than he saw the wild northern warriors upon him, swarming with incredible activity out of the hollows of the hills. Don John did his best to hold them in check as they came up the narrow path, but he was overwhelmed; and the King had scarce time to throw himself on horseback and spur down the valley at full gallop, when the Scots were swarming with their loud war-cries into the court-yard of the Abbey, and plundering the baggage which he had dropped in his hurried flight.

So narrow was the escape of a feckless King, and such the sufferings of the monks and farmers who dwelt even at such a distance from the Scottish border as Rievaulx. For the restless violence of that wild frontier overflowed like a seething cauldron, and sent its devastation down on Yorkshire hardly less than on any other of the six northern counties, which, indeed, were bound together by this common peril into a sort of unity such as was felt in no other group of English shires. In that debateable territory there was never any peace, nor was there ever security that Yorkshire might not be raided on any winter's night. It is somewhat strange that two centuries of union with Scotland have wiped out so many memories of the never-ending warfare of all the ages previous to those, leaving the recollection of the border warfare only in those districts further north where it was naturally most intense. However, all those bitter days are now long past, and I am climbing up the hillside through a wood which has not heard the shouts of battle for three centuries or more; but lies open, summer and winter, to the trooping of the dun deer, who can

> "... Draw to the vale
> And leave the hilles hee,"

with little fear of being scared by man. Over the broken moor they come in flocks, pausing an instant to watch the rare sight of a stranger toiling upwards through the springing bracken and the brown ling. One moment only the leader stands snuffing the air suspiciously; the next he canters carelessly away, followed by the whole herd, with a few shy backward glances. The woods have dropped away, and the summit of the hills is a brown waste of heather, crossed only by a few tracks hardly worth the name of roads. But it is not for the moor alone that I have come this way, beautiful as that is in the glowing of the evening sun, which catches every shoot of the young bracken and makes it glow as if it lived. This must have been the monks' track, for nothing more than the bulk of this vast hill parted Rievaulx from its sister Abbey of Byland, and the deer upon the hillside in old days must have been well used to see the white cowled figures from one or other Abbey pacing slow across the moor; and on solemn days of feasting must have witnessed their processions passing over the hill with banners and with chanting, to take part in some great act of worship with their brothers in the opposite valley. Steeply and by winding levels the road begins to drop when the hill is crossed, and it plunges into a deep cutting filled with trees, whose topmost branches are as yet beneath my feet, so steep and precipitous are the sides of the rocky chasm through which the road descends. It passes onwards through the shadow of deep woods, and at last emerges in a broad and lovely valley, where the broken fragments of the Abbey lie little tended, and having lost within the memory of living men a substantial portion of their buildings from decay.

There is not much in the history of Byland Abbey which is worth the effort of recollection. William of Newburgh, author of a dull though valuable chronicle, knew more about it than most men, having indeed been born and bred upon the charming hillslopes at the base of which the ancient abbey stands; yet his chief anecdote concerning it touches no one

among the saintly men who may be presumed to have dwelt there, but falls on a poor sinner, one Bishop Wimund, who, after gaining the undeserved affection of his flock in the Isle of Man, took to ravaging the Scottish islands, under the vain and insincere plea of being in very truth son of the Earl of Moray. In this rampaging career he met with singular success but fell at last by the wiles of his enemies, who took him and bound him, "and as both eyes were wicked, deprived him of both. . . . Afterwards he came to us at Byland, and

Byland Abbey.

quietly continued there many years till his death. But he is reported even there to have said that had he only the eye of a sparrow his enemies should have little occasion to rejoice at what they had done to him."

It was, I daresay, no fault of the monks of Byland that this fierce old guest of theirs learnt so little charity within their walls. I make no doubt there was many a poignant scene in cloister or refectory at Byland, when the blind old robber-bishop lifted up his voice in tales of lust and rapine, while the simple

monks listened with a fearful joy, fascinated by the glance and glitter of a fuller life than they had ever known, or crowded away in terror at the imprecations of the maimed savage whose thirst for vengeance tortured him even in old age. Well, he lies there now, resting at length beneath the green sward, over which the shadows of the broken arches lie so thickly; while

Coxwold.

I, if I would not lose the village of Coxwold in the coming dusk, must turn away from abbeys, and follow in the footsteps of the gentlest and the quaintest humourist who ever set forth the coruscations of his wilful fancy in this our English tongue.

"Gravity," said Yorick, "is an arrant scoundrel." It is too true; yet that arrant scoundrel has entered into his kingdom since Yorick's head was laid low in Bayswater Road, and does

now, indeed, possess the world. Responsibility comes posting hard behind him, and deadens every quirk and fancy, turns our minds to problems and our hearts to cares, lays on us the burden of to-morrow, breaks the pipe and puts away the tabor, so that this many a day we have not gone a-dancing underneath the elm trees on a summer evening. It is so much the greater reason why we should cherish the memory of him who jested for us so incomparably; and as I wander up the street of Coxwold in the dusk, past the gabled house where Laurence Sterne mocked the coming and the going of the years, a certain sadness steals over me such as invades a man who finds nothing but the scent of roses clinging to a jar in which the dewy flowers once stood fresh and living.

Sterne's House, Coxwold.

CHAPTER VI

LASTINGHAM, PICKERING, AND WHITBY

The Cleveland hills, near the foot of which wild elevated region Helmsley stands, have always been regarded as difficult of access, and for all travellers, save him who goes on foot with knapsack deftly poised between his shoulders, they deserve their reputation fully. For surely a country scored so deep by long, narrow, winding valleys is scarcely to be found elsewhere in England; and be the keen breezes of the moorlands as invigorating as they may, the traveller who has carved out for himself a route through this wild land, will sometimes marvel at the penetration of the Romans, whose camps and villas are so few in Cleveland, comparatively with the rest of Yorkshire, as to testify that they were not fond of breakneck hills, even when from the summits they could gaze out over prospects very wild and lovely. In fact, this rugged district, where a man may even now lose his way and perish on the moorside if he be not very wary on a winter's night, was regarded as a safe fastness by dwellers in the valleys in times much later than the Roman; and as long as Scotch invasions harried the rich plains of Mowbray, the villagers used to drive their cattle into Cleveland, where they lay safely while the smoke went up from farms and cottages in the level meadows.

Now it is quite clear that men who design to visit a mountain fastness must not expect to do it without fatigue; and it may

not be out of place to remark that the inevitable labours, or delights, of going up hill and down hill in Cleveland are not seldom increased to the degree of poignancy by the presence of a very woful kind of clay, which, on small inducements of even summer showers, makes a paste not to be regarded without awe by those who go on wheels.

> "Cleveland in the clay,
> Bring two shoes, carry one away."

So sang one unknown in days long past; and Cleveland is still the same as when he came limping out of it on one stockinged foot, composing his ill-tempered jingle in revenge. Perhaps it was he also who dealt that other metrical blow at the land which had swallowed up his shoe, and declared, with a pleasant indifference to any exactitude of computation,

> "Halton, Rudby, Entrepen,
> Far more rogues than honest men."

The bitterness of these unpolished versicles suggests identity of authorship; and, indeed, there can scarcely be more than one poet, however rude, who has left Cleveland with no inclination to commemorate other qualities than its clay and its rare lack of principles. If only benefits and kindnesses impressed the hearts of poets as deeply as injuries score them, what a memorable string of jingles we might have had, touching now on the rough friendliness of the men of Cleveland, now on their hospitality, and again on the sturdy independence which makes their characters respected.

Of course, we shall never see Cleveland if we linger here in Helmsley, talking of its qualities at length. And yet the case is one in which, as Sir Thomas Browne puts it in his pointed way, "Festination may prove precipitation, and deliberating delay may be a wise cunctation." Never were any words spoken so applicable to Cleveland, that wild land which gives up its charms to no hasty traveller, but reserves them for such as

care to linger on its cliffs and moors, giving an ear to those fancies of the peasants which still preserve unto our own day the fiercer creeds of long-forgotten races. For time has stood still these many centuries in Cleveland: and while the world outside has submitted to the flood of advancing knowledge which has long since drowned and washed away the old, strange faiths brought to England by our pagan ancestors, or found here when they came—creeds how old we cannot even guess!—this rocky land, this half inaccessible boss of crag and moorland, has stood up like an islet out of the waves, keeping still its traditions, and speaking loudly in the ears of all who care to listen of ages which have left as little trace elsewhere as the shadow of the summer clouds.

But for the moment it is not of paganism that my thoughts are full. For when I turn eastwards out of Helmsley upon the road to Pickering, I have travelled scarce three miles before I see upon my left a sign-post notifying that the road which turns up across a ridge of moorland leads to Lastingham; and the name recalls so many memories of those great days of Saints and early Christians in Yorkshire, before the Danes ravaged the country into desolation, that I cannot choose but turn off from my road and plod up hill and down hill till I see the ancient village lying in a hollow and the old church rising above it on a little eminence. It is a fine and solitary situation which Cedd, the Man of God, chose for his monastery full twelve hundred years ago; and if there be some exaggeration in Bede's description of the site as hidden among "lofty and distant mountains," yet the hills do rise very sharply and with noble outlines on the west, while on the north and east they swell more slowly into purple moors, stretching wild and lonely and without one break through Glaisdale and Rosedale, and many another gash in the rugged cliff country, to within sight of the River Tees. As I stood and looked down on this ancient sacred spot, the copper-coloured clouds which had been gathering in the south and west drew heavily together, and

hung lurid over the little village; in the northern sky there were large watery spaces of pale green; a wan light drifted over the hills and woods, and before I reached the humble village inn, thunder was crashing heavily around the hills, and the sky was torn right and left by branching antlers of forked lightning. The summer air darkened till all aspect of the day was gone; and in this spreading blackness, lit by the sudden lights that flashed from heaven, the strange old solitary life of monks among the dipping moorland hills became more real. In this elemental storm Lastingham was of no age, but bore the aspect which Cedd knew well when the storms of twelve centuries ago broke and rolled in thunder round these hills.

It is not easy for any man who lives to-day to form a picture in his mind of the lives of these old monks. But Bede and many another writer will tell us of the strength and fervour of their faith, of their communings with angels and demons, and have set down many such a tale as that which is related of this very house at Lastingham, where, in the latter days of the life of the good Bishop Cedd, a monk named Ouini, who was working outside the monastery, "heard the voice of persons singing most sweetly and rejoicing, and appearing to descend to the earth from heaven, which voice he said he first heard coming from the south-east—that is, from the highest quarter of the east—and that afterwards it gradually drew near him till it came to the roof of the oratory where the Bishop was, and entering the same filled the same and all round about it. He listened attentively to what he heard, and after about half an hour perceived the same song of joy to ascend from the roof of the said oratory, and to return to heaven the same way it came with inexpressible sweetness. When he had stood some time astonished the Bishop opened the window of the oratory, and making a noise with his hand, as he often had been wont to do, ordered him to come in to him. He accordingly went hastily in, and the Bishop said to him, 'Hasten to the church,

and cause these seven brethren to come hither, and do you come with them. When they were come . . . he added that the day of his death was at hand, 'For,' said he, 'that loving guest who was wont to visit our brethren has vouchsafed to come to me also this day, and to call me out of this world.' . . . When he had spoken thus much and more, he who had heard the heavenly song returned alone, and prostrating himself on the ground, said: 'I beseech you, father, may I be permitted to ask a question?' 'Ask what you will,' answered the Bishop. Then he added, 'I entreat you to tell me what song of joy was that which I heard of beings descending upon this oratory, and after some time returning to heaven?' The Bishop answered: 'If you heard the singing, and know of the coming of the heavenly company, I command you, in the name of our Lord, that you tell not the same to any one before my death. They truly were angelic spirits who came to call me to my heavenly reward, which I have always loved and longed after; and they promised that they would return seven days hence and take me away with them,' which was accordingly fulfilled as had been said to him." So near was heaven to earth, and so wide its gates lay open, in the days when Bishop Cedd prayed and fasted at Lastingham.

But of the nature of the creed these monks enforced among their peasantry, coloured as it needs must be by the Paganism of the people, there are still some traces left. "When any dieth," says an old manuscript found by Ritson in the Cotton Library, containing an account of Cleveland, "certayne women sing a song to the dead body, recyting the journey that the partye deceased must goe. . . ," and this fiery and stern lyke wake dirge is, beyond all reasonable doubt, the song referred to:—

"This ae nighte, this ae nighte,
Every nighte and alle;
Fire and sleete and candle lighte,
And Christe receive thy saule.

When thou from hence away are paste,
Every nighte and alle ;
To Whinny Muir thou comes at laste,
And Christe receive thy saule.

If ever thou gavest hosen and shoon,
Every nighte and alle,
Sit thee down and put them on,
And Christe receive thy saule.

If hosen and shoon thou ne'er gavest nane,
Every nighte and alle,
The whinnes shall pricke thee to the bare bane,
And Christe receive thy saule.

From Whinny Muir when thou mayst passe,
Every nighte and alle,
To Brigg of Dread thou comes at last,
And Christe receive thy saule.

. . . .

From Brigg of Dread na broader than a thread,
Every nighte and alle,
To purgatory fire thou comes at last,
And Christe receive thy saule.

If ever thou gavest meat or drinke,
Every nighte and alle,
The fire shall never make thee shrinke,
And Christe receive thy saule.

If meat or drink thou ne'er gavest nane,
Every nighte and alle,
The fire will burn thee to the bare bane,
And Christe receive thy saule.

This ae nighte, this ae nighte,
Every nighte and alle,
Fire and frost and candle lighte,
And Christe receive thy saule."

These splendid and memorable verses, throbbing with the passionate faith of Christian conviction, yet lurid with the sombre glow of Pagan fancies dying hard among these hills,

were surely chanted by many a band of mourners winding down slowly from the moorland paths on Lastingham lying in the hollow—men and women in whose minds there was a guest-house for the wild Norse fancies of their ancestors, at least as spacious as any they reserved for the new faiths taught them by the monks. The old creeds died hard, indeed they are not dead to-day, though men have been slaying them for eighteen hundred years; and when I listen to the stories told in a country such as Cleveland, or note in any work so admirable as that of Canon Atkinson the striking frequency with which the Pagan world crops up in our midst, I feel like one who wanders through some waste land of bog and rotting vegetation, yet judges from the blackened stumps of trees thrust up among the mouldering soil, that green woods waved once upon that ground, and the wind sang through them merrily. Such are the Pagan creeds as we collect their relics from the lives and actions of the peasants. The blackened stumps are there in strange profusion; but the leaves are dead, the sap has sunk, the beauty and the life have long since ebbed away.

I might dilate for many pages on this subject, but it is enough to say that the traces of old superstition are still so numerous in Cleveland as to suggest that in the days of the monks at Lastingham it must have been a chief element in their daily life. The simple minds of men saw devils everywhere, and it was doubtless one of the principal functions of the monks to exorcise them. For such exorcisms there were doubtless even then set forms; and it may be that to some lingering and corrupted memory of these solemn services of prayer and conjuration we owe the strangely jangled charms of wise men and witches in days much nearer to our own.

I have before me a small and very curious book entitled *Flagellum Demonum*, "The Scourge of Demons," published some three centuries ago by a Franciscan monk who, I presume, did but collect those services of exorcism which were traditional

in the unchanging Church which he served, and which may well have been used in the dales of Cleveland in something like the form here written down, even by the monks of Lastingham and certainly by those of later foundations. There are many strange and terrible ceremonies set forth in this work, many curses too awful to be read without a shudder. But of all the services of conjuration, an essential part is the following list of holy names, the crosses marking the points at which the Sign of the Cross must be made on the forehead of the penitent.

Hel + Heloym + Eheye + Thetragrammaton + Adonay + Saday + Sabaoth + Sother + Emanuel + Alpha + et

Castle Howard.

Omega + Primus et Novissimus + Principium et Finis + Agyos + Yschyros Otheos + Athanatos + Agla + Jehova + Homousion + Ya Messias + Esereheye + Christus Vincit + Christus Regnat + Christus Imperat + Increatus Pater + Increatus Filius + Increatus Spiritus Sanctus + Per Signum Crucis De Inimicis Nostris Libera Nos Deus Noster.

This is a strange medley of mystic names with phrases full of sacred meaning, and we might well suppose that many a generation must have passed since men made any use of it. But

there is a remarkable permanence in all beliefs or usages which have at any time stirred human minds at all deeply. Canon Atkinson has recorded the description of a very potent charm employed by a certain farmer to protect his stock from the witches who, as all men know, are powerful unto this day in Cleveland. It consisted of a half-sheet of note-paper, folded and sealed with three black seals, between each two of which was a hackle from a red cock's neck. On the paper was drawn a pentacle, the potent figure of all necromancers, in the spaces of which were inscribed the words "agla," "el," "on," "nalgah," "adonai," "sadai." Now out of these six words of awe, four will be found in the above extract from the monks' Book of Exorcisms, while the correspondence is made somewhat more remarkable by the circumstance that a cross is drawn above the word "nalgah" possibly a corruption—just as crosses are marked in the monks' text to signify the holy sign. But this is not all. The farmer's charm is adorned with five texts, whereof three are identical with those used in the Book of Exorcisms in close association with the extract given above, viz., *Caro Verbum factum est*, *Jesu Christi Nazarenus Rex Judæorum*, and *Hoc in Vince*.

It is true that the charm contains one or two elements which I cannot identify in the Book of Exorcisms which was, however, only a part of a larger work wherein the other items may perhaps be found. At any rate, there are so many points in common between the charm and the exorcism as to suggest, strongly, that the one was taken from the other. It would surely be passing strange if the Cleveland farmer, or the wise man who advised him, had worked out of his own head a charm so similar to that written out for general use by the Franciscan friar. But if we take the other view, and maintain that at the dispersal of the monks, their mystical solemnities and their occult knowledge passed into the hands of ignorant men who forgot its vital meaning, and let it sink into nothing more than an outlying swamp of that great bog of superstition which then and

now keeps many a charlatan from beggary, into what a strange and ancient world does the permanence of this charm conduct us!

I have lingered a thought too long at Lastingham, but it was the fault of the great storm which weather-bound me. At last the sky is clearing, and the torn black clouds are driven far down in the heavens, leaving a large dome of watery blue, out of which the sun pours down hot and burning on the village. I stroll up to the church, which was indeed what brought me here, a fine and interesting Early English building with a Norman apse, and a crypt, or more properly a lower church, of such singular and gloomy grandeur as drives out from the memory all things at Lastingham except itself. I do not venture to discuss the question whether this dark and cavernous abode of God may be old enough in truth to have seen St. Cedd kneeling at its ancient altar. It is enough for me that its rude and heavy arches have caught the dreams and aspirations of more generations of saints than I can count; and that in this chamber full of shadows, this catacomb among the Cleveland hills, past times return upon me strangely, so that I hear again the Bishop opening his lattice at the sound of that sweet singing, or catch the stern measures of the lyke wake dirge rising or falling with the wind which sighs downwards from the moors.

It is no part of my design to rend the hearts of those who read this work; and I say nothing therefore of the sorrows of my ride to Pickering through Cleveland clay. The sight of the old town was as welcome as a desert well to a panting camel; and I called a halt to let the steaming country dry.

Now Pickering, a great headquarters of the House of Lancaster, and therefore redolent of all the associations of the old bloody days, had also its share of joyousness, being in truth the dominating point of a huge forest, very famous for its deer, and therefore apt at all times to resound with horns and the cheerful baying of the hounds, and the jovial laughter of the

huntsmen trooping homewards from the chase. Good sportsmen, in the judgment of Gaston de Foix, who wrote a book about them heaven knows how many centuries ago, lived long and happily, and when they died all went to Paradise. I hope with all my heart it is so; but Gaston went on to add that bad sportsmen would not go thither, and that wrings my withers. Yet if right upon the one point he may very well have been wrong upon the other. I calm my apprehensions therefore; and forgive him the anxiety in gratitude for the suggestion in another paragraph. "And when he is comen hoom he shall doon of his shoon and his hosen and he shall wash his thighes and his legs and peradventure all his body." Good cleanly Gaston! He must have wound his huntsman's horn in some district not unlike the Cleveland clay.

A great forest is a great temptation. In these days morality, that most changeable of sciences, has so far altered its bounds that none but quite the lower classes ever think of poaching. I rejoice in this striking progress of humanity, and I refer all who wish to know how bad the old days were to the Coucher Book of Pickering. In that shocking record are recorded the names of those who took game unlawfully within the forest bounds, with certain other details setting forth how hard the law could strike at men who went to play without its sanction. But the distressing part of the matter is that the transgressors were not for the most part poor. They were the men of estate and landed property; they were the clergy, even the higher orders of those holy men, the priors, the abbots, not to mention the humbler parish priests, all of whom were demoralised by the nearness of the greenwood, and the sight of the deer trooping downwards from the hills. The Rector of Middelton, a mile or so from Pickering, was desperately fond of coursing, and kept four greyhounds on the borders of the forest. This was in the year of grace 1328. Good heavens! that I should dig up a man's follies when he was dust six centuries ago! Some years earlier than this one Alan, huntsman of the Abbot of Whitby—

note how close we are coming to the dignitaries of the Church—together with Thomas Nevill and some other wicked persons who need not be named, took a hind in Ellerbeck; their dogs, no less than seven in number, were the Abbot's dogs, and the venison went to the Abbey. This was on 8th March, 1294. There is a deadly precision about the date which forbids us to doubt the scandal. They were all outlawed, I am glad to say; and so were Robert Acklam, Geoffrey Lepington, John Duker, and Geoffrey Acklam, with a few more who made up a pleasant hunting party about the same time. Somebody must have been watching them all the day; for it is recorded that they took three hinds in Simon Howe Moss with bows and arrows and two gazehounds, one white and the other fawn-coloured, and carried the game to Glycotes in Eskdale at Lithebeck, where there is a sheepfold of the Abbot of Whitby—again this Abbot!—and then went on to the house of Robert Acklam at Newton. Well, they had a pleasant day no doubt; and within a short time they had little else to do but hunt, for they followed Alan the huntsman into outlawry and the green wood.

Page by page the Coucher Book records these sentences of outlawry. "To give the names of all," says the learned editor, "would be to give the names of the gentry of North-east York." And indeed it is but too true that he does not exaggerate. They are all there, those names of weight and mark which Yorkshiremen respect; so that one lays down the Coucher Book with the thought that any man of family condemned by the Court of Woodmote, or the Court of Swainmote, or by the Justices in Eyre, might at least console himself with the reflection that he would find the best of company where he was going.

Indeed the number of outlaws must have been very great in Yorkshire; and as these wild moors which run from Pickering to Whitby and the deep narrow winding valleys which intersect them were constantly receiving recruits turned into them by the wisdom of the law, it is not surprising to find the name of

Robin Hood, that prince of outlaws, recurring in this region. It may very well be that bold Robin found the dales of Sherwood, abutting as they did on more than one large town, and travelled by a populous highway, growing at times a trifle sultry; and such a district as this high crest of North-east Yorkshire, this towering wilderness of moors and crags stretching from the very sea coast into lands so solitary that only the curlews knew their intricacies, must have offered an easy and inviting shelter from pursuit. It is even yet a land in which a man might hide, as any one may ascertain to his cost who wanders from the beaten road; and I know no reason compelling us to doubt that the deep red curving bay under the great cliffs of Ravenscar, with its little huddled town nestled together as if it strove to keep some secret of its bad old life from the stranger who comes in greater numbers year by year to that once solitary spot, may have some just title to the name of Robin Hood. Perhaps it was his merry way of mixing up the rights of property which caused the little village to embark on that career of smuggling, if not worse, which all its natives own to with a cheerful smile. It may have been immoral, they admit, but at least it was not dull.

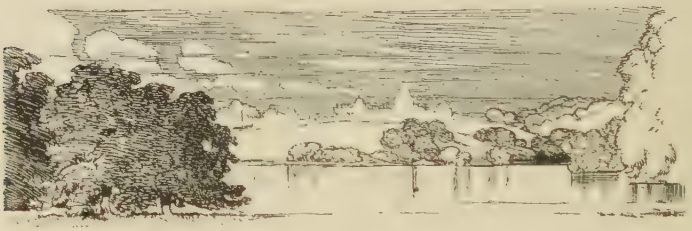
But how I have strayed away from Pickering! Let me get back across the moors to the old Lancastrian castle, which lies crumbling into a ruin, so picturesquely placed upon the hillside. I have climbed up to the very highest point of the old fortress, where a few broken walls remain yet of the great keep which was once a landmark far and near across the Vale of Mowbray, over Slingsby, and Gilling, and many another stronghold as far as the hills where Castle Howard stands. Far up into the Cleveland hills the red beacon must have flashed out from this summit in the times of Scotch invasion; but now it is all dead, and the only watchmen are the kites and crows. It is still a stormy afternoon, and a copper sky lours over the valley. Away in the west a low swelling hill catches a gleam of sunlight, and the green fields flash quickly into gold. But

over the wide plain the sky is dark and heavy, and the grey haze makes the distance infinite. Below me I can see the battlemented wall sweeping round the hill, strengthened by square towers at due intervals. But all the strength is shattered; here an ash and there an hawthorn has rooted itself among the stones, forcing them asunder, so that the soft growth of saplings does silently in a single season what not all the battering rams of the stoutest enemies could achieve. One

Pickering Castle.

small square tower is fairly perfect yet; but if I look down on it and try to reconstruct the aspect of the place as the Second Richard saw it when he came riding up the hill a captive, wondering only whether it were here that the release would reach him from a world which had lost its savour, suddenly the outlines of the past are sent swimming into fragments like the reflections in a pool when a stone is cast into it, and I am called back rudely to the present unromantic age by the sight and sound of shunting trains just below the Castle wall. To

what purpose should I listen for whispers out of the fourteenth century when the loud rattle of the nineteenth fills the air? Peevishly I get upon my legs again, and, climbing down the Castle hill, make my way into the church, which at least keeps firm hold on the silence of the past, and which possesses a fine Norman nave, several recumbent effigies of knights and ladies whose identity is long since lost, and a series of remarkable frescoes, which, when first discovered many years ago beneath the plaster which had concealed them for I know not how many centuries, were nicely whited over by order of the rector, who held that a clean and snowy surface disposed his flock to devotion much more certainly than any mass of ancient colour-



Castle Howard.

ing. Quite recently it has been discovered that frescoes are not immoral; and these very curious paintings are now open to the inspection of the world at large.

The road from Pickering to Whitby opens from the lane leading to the Castle, and many there must be who have stood at the parting of the ways, hesitating whether they shall commit themselves to this old coach road, or subside into the train which goes racketing through the valley. I do not presume to advise; I only state my own experience. The way appeared to go by gentle undulations along a ridge, and I said, "Go to, it will be thus right into Whitby." I paid no heed to the lowering of the sky, but started off at a good round pace, and

as I went cast a contemptuous thought behind me at the train, which even at that moment ran away screaming up the valley.

I had not gone far before the undulating ridge broke off sharply and let me down into the valley by a steep descent, followed by a sharper rise. The road became decidedly difficult : the surface was by no means dry, and suddenly out of the still sky there swept a blast of chilly wind, there was a roll of thunder far down on the horizon, the sky darkened in a few minutes to an inky blackness, and almost without notice such a storm of rain hissed down upon the sodden earth as might send the stoutest of mankind pelting to the nearest shelter. For me there was no shelter on that accursed road. There would be some loss of dignity in recounting the state to which I was reduced, when the tyranny of that tempest was overpast, and the deluge subsided to a steady drizzle. Nor would it be fitting to relate in what temper I climbed the hills that lay before me, nor with what fond hope I looked out vainly for an inn. At length I saw a welcome signpost which informed me that I was no more than a mile and a half from Levisham station, and I shot off like a homing pigeon on the shocking byway to which the broken finger-board directed me. It led me through a meagre, miserable village, where the only sign of life proceeded from a tinkling blacksmith's shop. The man at work was civil but amused. He smiled largely as he stood in his doorway answering my questions. Yes, the station was straight on ; the road was easy to find, a bit hilly to be sure. I cut him rather short and plodded on. In one mile, I argued, the hills could not be intolerable.

Alas ! I did not know. My knowledge of the land of Cleveland is wider now. The road began to drop. It coiled a little so that I could not see its full iniquity, but trudged on gamely thinking I was near the bottom. I met a postman. He laughed and turned to watch me. I knew why presently, for I was on the brow of what could only by the grossest flattery be called a ravine. It was an abyss, and the road ran

straight down by a gradient which was even as the gradient of a teacup. Down below me, in the very bowels of the earth, was a pretty valley, winding among the steep shags of gorse and ling that dropped precipitously to it on every side. I could hear the gushing of a mill leat swollen by the rains, and a small grey church stood midway in the narrow meadow which occupied the valley bottom. The chilly wind blew up the odours of damp woodland, and through the fresh shoots of the springing bracken I could see the quick brown ears of rabbits glancing on the further slope. Higher up the grey rock cropped out, and from one of the grassy shelves, a sheep, entangled in some mass of thorns, filled the whole valley with its piteous bleating. I could have found it in my heart to lament as noisily as he, and in good truth I hold that he who takes a cycle by that road needs no less assistance than a beam and pulleys. I looked back. The postman was still watching me, and I could hear his odious chuckles as he turned to climb the hill.

The rain had ceased and the narrow valley was deserted. I paused a moment when I reached the bottom, watching how the mill leat rushed out clear and sparkling from beneath the wet blossoms of a hawthorn. A rather wild brown light fell from the thunderous sky. The low church tower looked wan and shadowy. The sheep upon the heights was bleating still. The place had a strange aspect of solitude, of aloofness from the world, which made its beauty rather eerie, so that when the lightning began to play once more upon the hilltops, and an occasional sharp crack of thunder rattled round the crags, the sense of awe which it brought with it was but in keeping with all the impressions of that lonely spot, and I climbed up the steep and weary hill with a consciousness of pleasure in the keener air which chased away the thick fancies begotten in the valley bottom.

It was a rough, high ridge of waste pasture and shaggy moor, adorned with a little village and the humblest of country inns.

The further valley was looking wildly beautiful, when the rough road conducted me to the brow of the great hill above it. It was as deep as that out of which I had just climbed, but wider, and set with exquisite woodlands all along both slopes. There was the fresh green of beeches and the ruddy growth of budding sycamores, mingled with the darker foliage of firs and

Glen near Whitby.

ashes. A few light wreaths of vapour were drawn across the slopes, and from time to time a flash of lightning shot down into the hollow, for the storm was growling still among the crags. Far away upon the right a towering hillside was all scorched and black, while everywhere above the woodland lay the dark green moors waiting till the breath of later summer should kindle the warm purple flush upon their flanks, and the

noble colour leap like a flame from hill to hill, and make all glow with a splendour such as no king's palace ever boasted.

Such was the aspect of the deep main valley which cleaves Pickering Forest in twain, from the ancient town itself even up to the sea at Whitby; and you may go down between the folding of the hills, beneath scrub of oak and waving larches, and dark slopes of heather lit up by the fresh green shoots of springing bracken,—past Goathland, with its wild slope of moor, all ringing with the sound of waterfalls,—past Grosmont, past Sleights, until the river banks expand and the hills fall back, and you have reached a harbour full of clear green water, where one or two schooners are lying by the quay, and a couple of yachts are moored in midstream, while further off, above the old huddled red-roofed town, the rich mass of Abbey ruins stands out like fretwork against the grey sky.

Whitby.

CHAPTER VII

WHITBY AND THE NORTH-EASTERN COAST

It is a wild and windy morning, and as I climb out of the narrow streets of Whitby I see a gray tide breaking into white upon the long north beach, and a couple of fishing boats staggering along far out among the rough water. The wind comes in gusts, with an occasional short sob of rain, while overhead, through some gap in the torn clouds, a shaft of sunshine strikes downwards on the waves, and the gulls which sail across it gleam for a moment with flashing plumage, and are lost again in the grey, drifting haze. Round the base of the great cliff the

waves beat heavily with a low, deep tolling, which occupies all the air, and brings into my mind the story of the abbey bells, torn from the great tower on the cliff by some pirate, whose ship, with all its company, was lost on Black Nab—but a little way before me—as it ran down the coast with its ill-gotten freight. But the fishers plying up and down this coast hear the bells pealing still on stormy days. How should a man be free from fancies when the sea beats under the hollow cliffs as it does to-day? As I listen to its low, constant grinding, I almost realise that strange conception of the ocean as a sentient thing, which older writers found among the people on this coast. "When the wind is down," says Camden, "and the water like a level plain, it is no uncommon thing to hear at a distance a kind of horrid groan, at which time the fishermen will not venture out, supposing that the ocean is a huge monster, and on those occasions expresses a violent craving to devour human bodies," So it happens even in calm weather on this fabled coast.

I go toiling up a street of steps, and pause at last at the weather-beaten church. That ancient house of God, which stands out so finely in the sight of mariners, is not on the very summit of the cliff. There is a short further ascent to an open wind-swept space, where I can see an ancient cross surrounded by stone steps, and beyond it the blackened splendour of the abbey ruins, a seaward monastery, courting that exposure to the elements which monks almost invariably shunned. Looking downwards I can see the spray flying white and vivid round the lighthouse on the pier head. The north beach is one long line of grey breakers, lit up by rare gleams of fitful sunlight. The harbour runs inland like a deep gash among the lofty hills, and on either side of the tossing water red-tiled houses nestle cosily in the shelter of the hollow.

Such was the ancient town of Whitby, and such is all that a stranger tries to see who visits it to-day. For it was the rule in ancient times to build in sheltered spots, and the care with which

the townsmen hugged the hollow makes more striking the conduct of the monks or nuns who built the great abbey on the heights, where it was scourged in turn by every wind that God sent out of heaven. Fountains stands in a valley as fertile as a little Eden. Rievaulx was placed among the foldings of deep and lovely hills. Kirkstall commanded the rich water meadows of the Aire. But Whitby cast aside all such soft luxury and loveliness, and placed itself where its lights would beam far out to sea, and testify its mission to men who went to and fro upon those lonely waters.

What was it that induced the first builders to choose this site?—a ridge so noble and so far seen that the abbey, ruined and shattered as it is, must ever be one of the chief grandeurs of the English coast, ranking with Tintagel and St. Michael's Mount, and its own nearer neighbour, Scarborough; or, perhaps, related more closely still to that old monastery of Lindisfarne on Holy Island, further north, or the smaller Farne Island, where St. Cuthbert built him an hermitage, and dwelt with no other comrades than the storms and sea-birds, working miracles which may be read in Bede. There are some writers who maintain that Whitby was never populous until late Tudor days, till when none but the very smallest town grew up in the hollow underneath the abbey. I do not believe it. I go up and down the Yorkshire coast, noting the singular scarcity of harbours north of the great inlet of the Humber. Bridlington is an open roadstead, Scarborough a tiny artificial port, Robin Hood's Bay a paltry fishing village. Others there are none; and will any one say that in this vast and wealthy county, so prolific both in the stuff for trade and in men of wit and courage sufficient to turn it to profit, the value and importance of this deep shelter for shipping among the Cleveland hills can have been overlooked in any age of history? Twenty centuries ago bold sailors were roaming the North Sea. Are we to suppose that they used other harbours,

but not Whitby? The Danish settlements are thick and close in Cleveland. What would those bold seamen prize half so much as a commodious harbour for their pirate boats? In truth, it is not upon the English coasts that we need look for any safe and defensible harbour, however small, which has not from the very earliest times given shelter to shipping, and gathered round itself the dwellings of the sailors and the stores which satisfy their needs; and if one must speculate about the age of Whitby town, I say I hold that it was there, red-roofed and sheltered, long before the black magnificence of the rich arches was reared up as we see them now, and that seamen came and went from Whitby when a much lowlier abbey stood upon the height, when monks and nuns dwelt together on the windy cliff and the Abbess Hilda ruled them both impartially.

I doubt whether any large part of the good Hilda's authority was admitted by the sailors. Those who go down to the sea in ships are the same in all ages of the world's history, good, honest fellows, with no disinclination to other people's goods, when they can be had without undue trouble. It will be noticed throughout history that morality has approached all seaports from the land. Now the land approaches to Whitby in old days were particularly arduous, and morality is not an eager traveller. A thick darkness shrouds the actions of the Whitby sailors, and whenever it is broken by a ray of light, those brave men appear rather as sufferers than as malefactors. As thus, in the early days of the government of Lord Protector Cromwell, one Denton, who enjoyed a considerable notoriety upon these coasts, and was captain of a ketch armed with one piece of ordnance and about twenty men—a modest equipage for a pirate—robbed a Whitby ship of no less than two hundred firkins of butter! Pirates cannot be too particular, I know; but surely this greasy cargo must have been an embarrassment to Denton. We are not

told what fight the Whitby ship showed against these twenty men; but probably Denton was such a terrible fellow that he overawed all opposition. At any rate, he did well along the Yorkshire coast. About the same time he picked up a good ship called the *Amity*, of Scarborough, somewhere between Scarborough and Filey, and held the crew to ransom; and his exploits were piling up a fortune for him rapidly when he met with a sad accident on hailing a ship owned by Mr. Wiggone of Whitby, and was taken prisoner by unsympathetic men, and carried off to York Castle. This was in February, 1650–1, and in gaol poor Denton languished until June, though not without distractions and the pleasures of society, for his gaolers allowed him from time to time to dine with some of the many people in York who recognised his virtues and respected his character. One summer evening he went to dine with Captain Thornton; and after dinner, being probably a thought confused, took the wrong turning, and instead of getting back to his cell again, found himself at Walmgate Bar, where somebody was waiting with horses, and insisted on his mounting, and I think he must have ridden to the coast, for he certainly did not return to York.

Now this piracy was dignified by the name of warfare; for the pirates as a body were on the side of the banished king, and there were many who when they could no longer operate on land carried their swords to sea and did what they could to harass the commerce of the winning side It is therefore open to any one to maintain that the only piracy upon the Yorkshire coast was inspired by a lofty motive; but for my part I believe rather that the passions of the cavaliers caught up the system which they found existing, and that Whitby, if only it would speak, might tell us many a tale of rovers upon the sea and of wealth unlawfully acquired. For it is admitted generally that there were plenty of outlaws within the bounds of Yorkshire, and we have warrant for believing that they liked upon

occasion to mix a dash of sea life with their forest plunderings What says the old ballad, speaking of Robin Hood ?

> " When the lily leaf and the eglantine
> Doth bud and spring with a merry cheer,
> This outlaw was weary of the wood side,
> And chasing of the fallow deere."

It is true he went to Scarborough ; but we know well he came to Whitby also, where he was in high favour with the abbot, and used to amuse him after dinner with displays of archery. What brought him to Whitby ? The desire to enjoy a higher atmosphere ? By no means ; he tells us the real reason :—

> " The fishermen more money have
> Than any merchants, two or three."

There lies the secret of Robin's visits to Whitby and other parts of this lofty coast. There was more money in the pockets of the fishermen than in the purses of the fat traders who rode through Sherwood. I wonder how it came there. Was the price of fish so high in old days, and the market so good that fortunes could be made by catching it equal to or greater than those obtainable in trade ? Surely this cannot be the sole explanation ? There were, it is true, on most lonely coasts certain modes of growing rich much faster than by fishing. But we have leaned long enough on the wording of a ballad. I really know nothing of the practices of the Whitby fishers ; and what I may suspect is certainly not evidence.

The storms of eight hundred winters beating up this bleak sea coast, and the blasts scouring over the hillsides from the wild fells inland, have blackened the arches of Whitby Abbey with a rare magnificence. Dark and intricate, stained here and there with brown, the mouldings and the tracery have the fine colour of some worn sea cliff, on which the light never changes without revealing some fresh beauty.

It is said that the very sea birds stooped upon the abbey as they winged their way ashore to do homage to St. Hilda ; and indeed that pious lady might have felt herself slighted if they had paid her less respect, for the crows, and indeed all the fowls of the air, showed a singular deference to St. Cuthbert upon Farne Island, and it rarely happened in the old days of faith that one saint was content with less reverence than was rendered

Whitby Abbey.

to another. Perhaps the birds were conscious of a certain curiosity to see what was going on at Whitby in this mixed brotherhood of monks and nuns ; for the winged creation has always had a reputation for repeating scandal, and those who dwelt at neighbour monasteries were glad enough to hear it.

As I climb out upon the windy common which surrounds the

broken arches of the abbey, the season remembers that it is summer, the grey clouds part, and a flood of soft and vivid sunlight falls upon the ancient cross and casts deep shadows in the precinct of the ruin. Far away on the north beach the sea spray is torn from the rough breakers into a sort of mist, which drifts along the sand, shot through by sunlight in a radiant cloud, mysterious and fanciful, such as might well stimulate a man's imagination till he dreamt of visions and saw saints appearing on that shore which in old days was so lonely.

It is difficult not to talk of saints when one stands beside the ruins of this abbey. Yet I do not know that those who dwell in Whitby town to-day are distinguished by godliness above their fellow men. And, indeed, it will be noticed that the abbey is still left a good deal to itself, standing free from modern houses, as if there were some tradition in the town that a rather trying moral atmosphere existed on the cliff top, and that it was pleasanter living in the hollow, where by no means everybody was unnaturally good. Thus the town, being what it always has been, and the abbey standing empty of its saintly occupants, the visitor of to-day is likely to carry off, stored up in his recollection, as many tales of witches and of fairies as of St. Hilda, or any other of the holy men and women who dwelt there in old times. I have said much of saints already upon this desultory journey. Let us talk of witches now, notwithstanding that we are in much the same difficulty as that in which Corporal Trim found himself when asked suddenly to talk about white bears. "'Didst thou ever see a white bear?' cried Mr. Shandy, turning his head round to Trim, who stood at the back of his chair. 'No; an' please your honour,' replied the corporal. 'But thou couldst discourse about one, Trim,' said my father, 'in case of need?' 'How is it possible, brother,' quoth my Uncle Toby, 'if the corporal never saw one?' . . ." It is a difficulty truly. Now, I have never seen a witch, but really there are so many in the Cleveland district, of which Whitby is by far the most considerable

town, that it would be absurd to stay my pen because my personal experiences have been less rich than those of other men. Why, the very streets and shops of Whitby are often full of spirits, and not very many years have gone by since a man of Guisborough, entering a shop in this old fishy town, saw his own wraith standing there unoccupied. He called it a "waff." Now, it is unlucky in the highest degree to meet one's own double; in fact, it is commonly regarded as a sign of early death. There is but one path of safety; you must address it boldly. The Guisborough man was well aware of this, and went up without hesitation to the waff. "What's thou doing here?" he said roughly; "what's thou doing here? thou's after no good, I'll go bail. Get thy ways yom, wi' thee, get thy ways yom," whereupon the waff slunk off abashed, and the evil design with which it came there was brought happily to nought.

But waffs, however interesting, are not witches, and I must not let the manifold superstitions of Cleveland tempt me from my text. "For my part," said Sir Thomas Browne valiantly, "I have ever believed, and do now know that there be witches." I have no desire to be thought wiser than the silver-tongued physician of Norwich, and if I had, I should find it hard to resist the mass of evidence which is extant in Cleveland. Canon Atkinson has collected much of it with a loving hand. "Not believe in witches, saidst 'ee'? Wheea, ah kens well there's eleven in G—— at this present tahm! Neea, neea, it will na dee to be wivout my witchwood!" So said an excellent old woman who, in pulling out her purse, had pulled out also her witchwood, and was much concerned on discovering her loss. Probably there are some people so ignorant as not to know what witchwood is, or what use to make of it. Such ignoramuses would do well to sit at Canon Atkinson's feet rather than at mine; but as *Forty Years in a Moorland Parish*—that delightful manual of wit and wisdom which no Yorkshire topographer can henceforth ignore—may not be on the shelves

of every one who reads this book, I will draw upon its learning sufficiently to explain the point.

Witchwood must be cut from the rowan tree, and from a tree, moreover, which the cutter had not only never seen before, but of whose existence he had no knowledge. It must be cut from such a tree upon St. Helen's day, and with a household knife, and must not be carried home by the same route on which the searcher had gone out. Witchwood is thus, in the language of the economists, difficult of attainment ; and it has also value in use, otherwise how would the witches be kept out of dairies and kitchens, where they might work much mischief? A piece of witchwood laid upon the lintel of the door is a sure protection, and it is of no less service in a cow-byre, where it is indeed even more needed, since everybody knows how apt witches are to draw the milk of cows. Of course, there are other ways of protecting cows ; and one such was discovered near Wakefield—another district where witches always have been rampant. An old cow-byre was taken down, and in a hole over every cow's head was a paper bearing the following scrap of odd Latinity :—

" Omnes Spiritones landent Dominum,
Habentu Mosa et Prophetores,
Excugat Deus et dissipentur,
Manu segas amori,
Fiat. Fiat. Fiat."

It is a natural tendency with men who deal in tales of superstition to believe those gleaned within the districts they know best to be peculiar to it alone ; and thus it is a somewhat unpleasant shock, uprooting partially one's faith in human kind, to discover that many of these tales are flourishing hardily not only elsewhere in England, but even far beyond the seas and in lands of ancestry widely different from our own. I should not have taken this occasion to make an observation, which is after all not very original or recondite, had it not been that the persistency with which some of these tales are claimed as being

purely Yorkshire becomes exasperating. Take the Farndale story of Hob, the demon who worried a certain farmer so much that he resolved on flitting. Early in the morning as he was on his way with his household goods in a cart, a neighbour meeting him said, "Ah! I see thou's flitting." "Ay," cried Hob out of the churn, "Ay, we'se flitting." On which the farmer, seeing he could not rid himself of Hob, turned back to his old abode. Now this tale is repeated in almost every book on Yorkshire which has been written, no doubt with perfect justice, since it is indeed a story current in the north, if not quite peculiar to Yorkshire. But while Canon Atkinson has produced the Danish counterpart of the tale, I may add that it is current also in far distant Apulia, where Hob passes under the name of "Il Lauro." "The Lauro," says Miss Ross, in her *Land of Manfred*, "is most capricious. To some who ask him for money he gives a sackful of broken potsherds; to others who ask for sand he gives old coins. He took a particular dislike to a cousin of the old shepherd's, sitting on her chest at night and giving her terrible dreams. At last she was so worried by the Lauro that she determined to leave her house. All the household goods and chattels were on the cart; nothing was left but an old broom, and when the goodwife went to fetch it, the Lauro suddenly appeared saying, 'I'll take that. Let's be off to the new house.'" What is this but the tale of Farndale Hob? And since it is equally unlikely that Yorkshire taught it to Apulia, or Apulia to Yorkshire, we are started on a vein of inquiry more fitted for the learned pages of some work on folklore than for those of such a rambling chronicle as mine.

Well, I have lingered long enough upon the headland; let us go down and see the port. There is not much of interest in the town itself, save a knot of narrow, winding streets, in whose individual buildings one may search vainly for any beauty or even quaintness of design. It is only when one reaches the water's edge that the magic of the place reasserts

itself; for as the cliff comes in sight again, the houses appear only as a blur of colour, and it is the ruin dominating the whole scene to which all eyes are drawn. One is always conscious of it; and as I walk along the quay, out upon the pier which juts eastwards underneath the town, it is not the lighthouse, nor the great range of cliffs which occupy my thoughts, nor the large empty harbour, nor even the great crowd of fishing boats, Scotch, Cornish, and East Anglian, which make such a merry spectacle when they run out into the rough water on a breezy morning—it is the abbey, still the abbey, the work of men whose life was done and their ideals ground into dust full ten generations ago.

If anything could rid me of this prepossession it would be the beauty of the scene which lies spread out before me at the end of the pier. For the sun is breaking through the heavy tent of clouds on every side, and blue sky is chasing gray all down the heavens. The sea, which has been brown and sullen, is changing colour every moment, so that great heaving swells of vast extent have caught the softest tints of green, while beyond it is all gray and silver. I look out northwards along the sands to the further side of a wide bay terminated by three lofty headlands all in shadow; but at their junction with the land the sun catches the green fields in the dip, and glows there sweetly. As far as I can see, on every side there is a rough sea tossing into sparkles, brushed by myriads of sea-birds, glancing up the rocks in vivid flashes, driven along the sands in that singular translucent mist which I have already mentioned, and which, as it eddies and rolls along the northern sands, takes now one shape and now another as rapidly as the changes which one watches in the glowing embers on a winter's night.

Such is Whitby, a seaport of some consequence, though it has lost the chief portion of that whaling trade which the sturdy Yorkshiremen of the last century pursued with relish in its danger. It was doubtless the spirit and tradition of those

great voyages among the ice which animated Captain Cook, as it did many another brave sailor of whom the world knows

Whitby Harbour.

nothing, and sent him from the huckster's shop at Staithes to a renown as great as that of Torres and Magellan. He is the

true hero of this coast in modern times, and as I climb out of Whitby by the hilly road which passes northwards, his great adventures and his piteous fate serve to amuse my memory until I find myself running out upon the shore at the hamlet of Sand's End. There are a few neat cottages upon the landward side, and the beach is broken into terraces or platforms by low shelves of rock cropping out amid the sand. I turn for a last view of Whitby. The lighthouse at the entrance of the harbour is clearly visible, and a reef of low rocks is just left uncovered by the tide, which whips over them in spray driven by the gusts of a sharp northern wind.

It is from this pleasant village of Sand's End that the judicious will diverge to see Mulgrave Castle and the lovely woods which surround it. But I have far to go ere night, and indeed when I call to mind the great distances of the West Riding, the valleys and the waterfalls which lie before me, and the sweet air of the moorlands which I have to climb, I feel that I have delayed too long within this land of Cleveland, and must hurry onward with what speed I may. But it is a weary road, and hills lie before me which are too steep to be made pleasant even by the sight of sea-birds soaring round the grey cliff-tops; while ere long the road runs inland, as it often does in this part of Yorkshire, where the railways have usurped the coast, and I have consequently nothing else to think of than the stories and traditions of this country, where gnomes and fairies have continued their pranks unchecked almost to the present day.

There was one such in those very Mulgrave Woods, which I have but this moment left behind me. Her name was Jeanie; she may be there still for aught I know, but few will go to look for her when they hear what befell one who desired her acquaintance many years ago. He was a farmer in this neighbourhood, and he rode up on horseback to her dwelling, calling her by name. I do not know whether he omitted any title of respect, or whether it was merely the unauthorised attention

which enraged the irritable Jeanie. But the fact is that she rushed out in a towering passion and flew at the unlucky

The Coast Road to Whitby.

farmer with a wand. He spurred his horse and avoided her blow, but she gave him chase, and gained upon him for all

the fleetness of his horse; so shuddering and pursued the luckless farmer galloped to a brook, which he leapt in the very nick of time. For Jeanie was upon him, and as the horse rose to the leap, her wand descended on his back, cutting him in two, so that Jeanie retained his hind-quarters on her side the water, while the farmer with the head and forelegs fell on the safe side of the flowing stream, which fairies cannot cross. It was a narrow escape, and one may understand why it is that when the clashing of the bittles which Jeanie and her fellow bogles use in washing their linen at Claymore Well is heard echoing down the dales, the peasants will not interfere nor attempt to see what the demons are about.

The subject of bogles is a tempting one, and I would fain linger on it in this region where they are so numerous. One famous member of the clan dwells at Runswick, whither I am going as fast as the hilly road permits, or rather he did dwell there until men quarrying for jet tore down the cliffs and destroyed the hole in which he used to lurk, reviled because he was fond of drowning people, yet loved because he cured them of the whooping-cough. Runswick is still what it always has been, a mere fishing village.

> "Souther, wind, souther,
> And blow father home to mother;"

so the children used to chant while dancing on the cliff-top; and though they have grown too wise to do it in these days of Board schools, that is not because their hearts are set less eagerly on the changes of the sea, or the prospects of the fishing grounds. The houses are dotted here and there on the high broken ground which sweeps down in fine undulations to the shore, where two or three small boats lie hauled up on the beach, and a few low shelves of blackened rock jut out into the receding water. Cloud and sunshine sweeping over red rock and grey sea, the heavy blows of a caulking hammer resounding from a hillock just above the beach, the cries of children

playing near the water's edge—such are the memories which I retain of Runswick Bay, a pleasant solitary spot unto this hour,

Runswick Bay.

and one which somewhat stirs the imagination by the very aloofness from the outer world which distinguishes it yet.

It is no long journey from Runswick to Staithes; and my

wonder as to the conditions of life in these solitary hamlets in old days outlasts the undulations of the way, so that when I come down the bare road underneath the railway, and find myself standing on the brow of the hill above the cramped and fishy town, I am still pondering whether it can indeed have been fish alone which amused the people. Even mermen, such as were caught at Skinningrove, a trifle further up the coast, cannot have done much to relieve the monotony of nets and lines. Human nature will break out and find excitement. As for the town, it has feared to climb the hill; and so, as it expanded—if indeed it contains more houses now than the first builders planted there—it has crushed itself more and more tightly into the hollow of the last slopes near the sea. Thus it follows that when you are within twenty yards of the town you might jump upon it from the summit of the hill: and as you go down you plunge into a winding street of plain and ugly houses which precipitates you at last upon a small beach of shingle, walled in by two fine and lofty cliffs, having more beauty of outline than is common on this coast, where the precipices are for the most part of such a crumbling stone that only their sheer height makes them imposing.

There is much quaintness, though little beauty, in this cramped cleft of houses, where Captain Cook began his career by stealing a shilling from his master's till, and running off to sea. It was a slender equipment for so great a journey; but probably the till contained no more. I lament the theft as I climb the hill, and take up my long journey towards Guisborough; but indeed I discover in my heart a certain sympathy for the erring lad who did so nobly afterwards. Staithes is certainly a place of most portentous dulness. Its attractions have been overrated. There are half a hundred fishing villages upon the English coast of equal quaintness and of far more beauty; and as I run on through the bare unlovely country, I am well content to leave the remainder of the Yorkshire coast unseen. Flamborough is a great and noble headland; Scarborough

a crag of wondrous grandeur : Whitby in sheer beauty may vie with any port in England. But the true loveliness of Yorkshire

Staithes.

does not lie upon her coast. In that she can be outmatched. It is in river scenery that she is peerless ; and that is why I am

now hastening westwards, towards the pretty town of Guisborough, beneath the noble cone of Roseberry Topping.

I should be something less than the good Shandean, which I proclaim myself to be, if I could pass the town of Guisborough without allusion to the terrific curse which Doctor Slop was inveigled by Mr. Shandy into levelling at his unfortunate man-servant Obadiah ; and as I am tired of describing scenery, while my readers will have to submit to many pages of ecstatics

Near Guisborough.

before we part beneath the slag heaps which adorn the neighbourhood of Sheffield, I will leave all pretty Guisborough to Mr. Pennell to describe, and recall the circumstances which supplied Mr. Shandy with the original of this awful imprecation.

It must have occurred to many of those who read Tristram Shandy that the unadorned wit of a humble parish priest could scarcely have contrived, without assistance, to put together a curse so strangely detailed and so comprehensive. The doubt

is warranted. The curse was the composition of a greater man —one far more used to cursing, and who, moreover, had received at least the shell of it from immemorial ancestors, all experts in the pleasing exercise of appealing to the powers of heaven to punish those whom earthly terrors could not reach. There was a certain Sir Thomas Chaloner of Guisborough, who, while travelling in Italy, visited by special permission the alum works, from which the Pope of that day drew a substantial revenue; and pondering on the nature of the processes, he began to recollect that on his own estate at home he had all the materials for the lucrative manufacture which was so profitable to the pontiff. He was wise enough to keep his thoughts locked up in his bosom until he found an opportunity of secret converse with some one or two of the Pope's workmen, whom he tempted by large offers to accompany him to England. It fell out as he had anticipated, and ere long the Pope heard that a large trade in alum was growing up in Cleveland by the energy of Sir Thomas Chaloner whom he had befriended, and of his own workmen whom Sir Thomas had stolen from him. The outrage was intolerable. Had Sir Thomas been within reach, the Pope would have settled the matter for himself, in some one of the time, honoured ways by which Popes rid themselves of men who had offended them. But since the ocean roared between them, nothing remained but to send a blighting curse across the sea, and the Pope started off in this way: "By the authority of God Almighty, the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, and of the Holy Canons and of the undefiled Virgin Mary, the Mother and Patroness of Our Saviour, and of all the Celestial Virtues, Angels, Archangels, Thrones, Dominions, Powers, Cherubim and Seraphim, and of the Holy Patriarchs and Prophets, and of all the Holy Innocents who, in the sight of the Holy Lamb, are found worthy to sing the new song; of the Holy Martyrs and Holy Confessors, and of the Holy Virgins, and of all the Saints, together with all the Holy and Elect of God, we excommunicate

and anathematise you, Thomas Chaloner, &c., &c., &c., from the thresholds of the Holy Church. . . . and as fire is quenched by water, so let their light be quenched for evermore, unless they repent and make satisfaction for their crime. . . . May they be cursed wheresoever they are, whether in the house or in the field, in the highway or in the path, in the wood or in

Guisborough Abbey

the water, in the market or in the church ; may they be cursed in living or in dying, in eating and in drinking, in hungering and in thirsting, in fasting and in sleeping, in slumbering and in working, and in resting, in sweating and in blood-letting ; may they be cursed in all the faculties of their bodies, inwardly and outwardly, may they be cursed in the hair of their

head, and in their brain, in the crown of their head and in their temples, in their forehead and in their ears, in their eyebrows and in their cheeks, in their jawbones and in their nostrils. . ." Upon my word I weary of this anatomical category of organs, and will leave any one who lists to complete it for himself.

Such was the curse launched from the holy stool of St. Peter at the audacious Englishman who dared to make alum. It did no particular harm to any one, and serves merely as an amusing

Saltburn

relic of the savage spirit brought to the performance of their sacred duties by the successors of St. Peter.

It is growing dark, and the long journey is nearly over. This long while my road has been dropping out of the hill country, and entering on that vast plain which, as I have said already, occupies the whole of central Yorkshire, and to me, remembering through what wild, undulating country I have come, the importance of the towns lying in the centre of this level strath becomes

plain, as by a sudden flash, and I comprehend why the musters of knights and yeomen assembled to repel the Scots were gathered so often at Northallerton, and why the raiders passed so frequently by this level route into the heart of Yorkshire, avoiding as long as they might those hills on either hand through which the conduct of even light-armed troops must have been a matter of some difficulty, while an army encumbered with booty would fall an easy prey to any bold attack.

On the Greta.

CHAPTER VIII

NORTHALLERTON, CATTERICK, GRETA BRIDGE, AND BARNARD CASTLE

I OFTEN think that much abused person, the rapid traveller, might if he would make a telling answer to his critics. For how inaccurate, he might say loftily, is the impression gained of the

individuality of a people or the aspects of a country by those who only creep around it, devoting weeks of indolence to the study of a single district! For grant that in their gropings among minute and long forgotten things they have indeed found some of note and interest, that from the heap of motley rubbish they have raked together they can in truth extract some one or two pearls of price. Grant that their loitering is no excuse for idleness, that they have noted flowers I have missed, plucked fruits which I left hanging on the tree, heard songs of which I only caught the echo, and listened to the multitudinous murmuring of the sea which did but glance up green and azure at me as I hurried by. Let them rejoice in their knowledge of a single furrow; let them loiter down one hedgerow and believe it is the universe. I leap over it and go my way, out into the laughing world, over the green fields and away through the sunny country, noting how the shadows chase each other across the grass, with careless heart and eyes wide open, catching now a glimpse of hill country, and now a scrap of valley land, eating my early breakfast by the sea and munching my bread and cheese for lunch in a roadside tavern many a mile inland, till all my heart and body are a-throb with the joy of wandering and of rapid motion, and my fancy stimulated by the change of scene shows me in quick flashes how the joints and struts of the whole land are dovetailed in together, and what manner of beings it has brought forth to help on its destiny in the life of man.

Heaven help me! I have blundered into an apologia, a thing I never dreamt of doing, and one which I abhor in others. But let it stand, for indeed if such a thing is ever excusable, it is to be forgiven in me at the present moment, when having come down out of the highlands upon the level plain which is the heart of Yorkshire, I look round to see what I have done on this one section of my journey, and what I have in mind to do upon the other. Here is the time to stand and think, to repent of acts of haste and carelessness, and resolve to commit no more.

I know my failings. I have many mentors. One man grieves because I did not notice that this church was Saxon, while another murmurs that only by poring over Domesday Book at every stopping place, could I make my journey profitable. "It is mere levity not to deviate to see these camps," shouts one; while another adds that if I do not mean to talk about the grave-mounds on a certain moor, I had better stay in the south. For all these faults, and many more unmentioned, I do grieve and am duly sorry. Heaven made me so that at certain times I would rather wander across the hills without a definite purpose in my mind, swallowing the wind and basking in the sunshine, than turn aside to speculate on the wildest fancy of the most learned antiquary, or the ugliest building of the most ancient man. And that is why this book is not a guide; and now let me get upon my way, for the western hills are wide, and the dales run up for many a mile into their recesses, and the becks that leap down their rocky sides are so many and full that the whole land is musical with running water, so that its rivers and its falls give it a character of wondrous beauty, over which we will not hasten, but will leave ourselves full time to linger where we will.

And, therefore, passing out of this old town of Northallerton, and crossing the level, fruitful country, where the great battle was decided, and which lies smiling now as if it had never seen the Scotch and English banners hurtling together in most deadly strife, I ride down over Swale till I reach the grand old highway which the Yorkshiremen call Leeming Lane, an obvious old Roman road, cutting straight as an arrow through the country towards Catterick, and undulating by gentle rises and declines as far as one can see in either direction. A Roman road it was, as I have said, for this is part of Watling Street, by which the Roman legions marched northwards, whether they were bound for Newcastle or for Carlisle. The two roads diverge at Scotch Corner, where I shall pause presently; but in the meantime, as I run on over the smooth

and velvet surface of this ancient way, I cannot choose but remember that it was notable much nearer our own times, and that its fine, broad reaches saw the gallops of as many a team of fine horses as ever made the coaches spin on any road in England. Not all the coaches for the north ran upon this splendid road, for some turned eastwards from Boroughbridge and went north through Topcliffe, Northallerton, and Yarm. But there was enough traffic throughout all the days of coaching to maintain two fine old inns, now, alas, turned into goodly farms; and the "Telegraph," a very famous coach, ran this way from Leeds to Newcastle, up to the outbreak of that sad fondness for machines which made the British public love the smut and soots of the iron way better than the clean dust of the old high-roads.

Never did any highway proclaim its old lost consequence more plainly than does Leeming Lane. Not the nine miles between Doncaster and Bawtry, which I take to belong by undoubted right to the nobility of roads, the primæval aristocracy of travelling ways, lost and swamped amid a crowd of paltry modern imitations, can show a nobler stretch of wide grass borders, or a fairer surface than this lane which follows where the Romans trod, themselves in all likelihood adapters of an even older highway which may have followed in this track since the very earliest days when men began to pass from south to north within this land of Britain. One cannot fail to be conscious of some reverence for that which is so very ancient, some respect for the shadows of all the countless hosts which have passed this way on their long-forgotten business. And as I ride on through the summer morning, running now under the deep shade of elms, now out into the sunlight, and always tasting the sweet scent of hawthorn and wild roses in the hedges, it seems to me that the very goodliness of the farms and villages, their spacious outbuildings, and the ordered roomy comfort of the houses, leads me back to ages which are not our own, so that I almost look to see stage wagons toiling along the

level road with high-pitched tilts, and wagoner plodding beside them on his stout, white pony, or to behold a packman casting off his bale of goods by a roadside tavern, while from all the village doors the women pour out eagerly to get first sample of his wares.

But they are gone. All that old life has passed away, and the road is sleepy and deserted. I run into the old town of Catterick—I call it town designedly, for how can one insult with the name of village a place at once so ancient and still so dignified in its decay? What sights it saw, this old place which was once so sportive, when all the gentry of the county of broad acres met those of the surrounding shires on the racecourse, long disused, or when some chaise spattered all over with mud dashed up to the door of the "Angel" or the "Golden Lion," disgorging some couple of insane young persons on their way to Gretna Green, while the cry, "First pair out," woke the sleepy post-boys in the old inn yard, and the housemaids ran to the door and giggled and wished that some one would run off with them. Ah, gay old life! It is dulness, sleepy dulness which afflicts us now, and old towns like Catterick are a standing protest against our anæmic modern ways, a mute and pathetic appeal for the restoration of the old, full-blooded, noisy, rattling life of fighting cocks and runaway marriages. There, let me get on my way, or the spirit of old times will lead me too to hire a chaise for Gretna, and carry off a chambermaid, forgetting that the useful blacksmith is dead, and his register will hold no more names.

I go on past that fine old inn the "George," which still adorns the very ancient bridge a mile beyond the town of Catterick. It is the Swale across which the road is carried at this point, a river which even there is full of beauty, and which inclines me to turn westwards to the great old town of Richmond, not so far away; for the fact is that the shadow of that vast stronghold of the Earls of Brittany dominates this country, of which it was the feudal centre, and of which it still

remains the grandest ruin, and the most hoary centre of tradition. But my route lies onwards ; and with reluctance I pass by the pleasant road which turns off at the river's bank, solacing myself as I go on with the pleasant memory of old Jenkins. I suppose that most men have some knowledge of this worthy, though I fear he is apt to be confused with another patriarch who gave his name to pills. Jenkins lived before the days of pills. He was born in 1501, and died in 1670—if any one believes this to be a lie, I really do not care—so that he reached the respectable age of 169 years. Any person interested in English history may take down his books and work out the events which Jenkins must have seen or heard of. I only mean to say of him by way of pointing the curiosity of his great age, that towards the end of his long life, a certain lawyer who was in search of evidence of the kind that lingers only in the minds of very aged people, journeyed to Bolton on Swale, where the patriarch resided, and seeing a white-haired, feeble man sitting in the garden of the cottage pointed out to him, began to tell his tale. The old man heard him out, and then said feebly, "I dunnaw nowt aboot 't. Tha'd best see my feyther in t' hoose." Marvelling that one so old should have a father to refer to, the lawyer went inside, and found there cowering over the fire a poor, palsied creature absolutely broken down with years, whose toothless jaws mumbled out with difficulty that his memory was not very good, but that his father had a grand. one ; and that he was outside in the yard chopping wood Marvelling still more the lawyer went out behind the house, where he found a hale and ruddy old fellow chopping logs with vigour that would have done credit to his great- great-great-grandson. He put down his axe and greeted the visitor courteously. He remembered all about the matter in hand, and gave the necessary evidence with all kinds of confirmatory circumstances, which won the cause. Not long afterwards, he died, leaving at this, the very gate of Swaledale, a flavour

of the marvellous, which we shall find abundantly maintained when the moment comes to enter that deep and winding gorge which the most rapid of the Yorkshire rivers has hollowed out among the hills.

These agreeable reminiscences of old Jenkins have brought me to Scotch Corner, where the coaches for Carlisle turned off from the main north road to traverse the exposed and lonely way through Bowes and across Stainmoor, sacred for many a century to outlaws, for whom alone it is a proper habitation. I shall not go out upon that dreary waste, but I jog along the ancient road for some eight miles yet, passing on the left the village called Gilling, which was the centre of this country before the Norman earls built the great castle at Richmond. Behind Gilling rises the lofty wooded ridge which bounds the valley of the Swale, and the hollow on this side is fertile and pleasant. There is not much else to see upon the road, till after some eight miles it begins to trend downwards, a wide fertile country opens in advance, bounded by blue lines of moorland, and suddenly, before one realises that any scenery of more than common interest is at hand, the road has run out upon a small steep bridge, under which a brown shallow river splashes onwards over boulders, past green meadows full of grazing cattle, and under overhanging thickets of beech and sycamore. It is the Greta. Brignall banks are but just out of sight. Rokeby stands upon my right, hidden by stately trees. Mortham Tower is but a little way down stream, and that way also lies that fairy scene which most of us have gazed on upon Turner's canvass, not without some beating of the heart, some qualm of doubt whether such loveliness is indeed revealed to any save to those rare souls who are worthy to receive "the light that never was on sea or land." Let this remain among the questions which each man prefers to resolve according to his own judgment. I will not describe the meeting of the Greta and the Tees.

Indeed, when having rested and refreshed myself at the "Morritts' Arms," I sally out to stroll along the noble meadows by the bank of the small noisy stream, watching the wagtails

Bridge on the Greta.

flying in and out beneath the bank, and the shadows driven quickly by the wind across the great trees and the wide lawns of the park beyond, I find myself little disposed to describe

once more in my own words those scenes which I learnt to love long years ago in the work of the great master, Walter Scott. I stroll onwards up the hill by a path that leads away a little from the river, and goes by an exquisite wood all carpeted with wild garlic, and a few late primroses lingering where the cool shade is thickest, till at length I come upon an old house surrounded by a wall which was built clearly for defence, and gathered round a tower which is a castle keep in miniature. This is Mortham Tower, and the place is worth visiting on every ground. In fact it is one of the old border peels, and speaks eloquently of the days of Scotch invasion. Indeed the ancient house of Rokeby on the lower meadows by the river was burnt by the Scots in a foray after Bannockburn, at which time this ancient stronghold was doubtless besieged and perhaps defended with success by reason of its greater strength.

So here, too, fell the strokes of border warfare, full sixty miles from the debatable land, and the chosen haunts of those Armstrongs and Johnstones whose restless turbulence drew so bitter a toll of life and happiness from every district they could reach.

> "Lord God, is not this a pitiful case,
> That men dare not drive their goods to the fell,
> But limmer thieves drive them away,
> That fears neither heaven nor hell?"

So sang one too sick and sore at heart to make good verse; and, indeed, it is only those ballad writers who caught up the cries of anguish floating in the air and crystallised them in a form which defies all time, it is those nameless bards alone who can tell us what the border warfare meant. It is all so long ago that nothing but a confused din of slaughter and the clash of arms floats down the centuries, save when out of the stanzas nursed in the hearts of the people there rings a cry of woe so utter and of desolation so supreme as awes even the careless listener of to-day, and teaches him in one brief moment

all that history, in its dignified narration, can never tell him.

" My love he built me a bonny bower,
And clad it all with lily flower,
A brawer bower ye ne'er did see
Than my true love he built for me.

. . . . .

" He slew my knight, to me sae dear,
He slew my knight and poined his gear.
My servants all for life did flee,
And left me in extremitie.

" I sewed his sheet, making my mane ;
I watched the corpse, myself alane ;
I watched his body night and day,
No living creature came that way.

" I took his body on my back,
And whiles I went and whiles I sat,
I digged a grave and laid him in,
And happed him with the sod sae green.

" But think na ye my heart was sair
When I laid the moul on his yellow hair ?
Oh ! think na ye my heart was wae,
When I turned about away to gae ?"

In those few lines, so potent still to touch the heart, lies the whole bitterness of the border warfare. And if that sea of cruelty and troubles surged up more rarely into Yorkshire than into its neighbour counties of the north, yet there was no land on that side of the Humber where the people dwelt in safety, and this rich valley of the Tees was never likely to escape.

This old house, therefore, which now stands mute and desolate, has many tales to tell ; and amongst them all we ought not to forget the memory of that great family which gave its name to the estate and made it illustrious with a grandeur which clings about it yet. Rokeby was a name of power throughout this country in early Plantagenet times, and ever after, till the civil wars ruined the house, like many

another which had owned a heritage as notable, and left the head of the family burdened with debts, yet surrounded by a group of sons and nephews in whom he might yet hope to see the glory of his family restored.

Now, these boys had an uncle, one Ralph Rokeby the younger, of Lincoln's Inn, who held the post of Secretary to the Council of the North, and to him it was of very dear concern that they should grow up to an honourable future. So he, desiring to leave nothing untried which might secure that end, left behind him a memoir in which human love for the lads is

Rokeby.

so blended with solicitude that they should not fall short of the honourable conduct of their ancestors, that one cannot read it without sympathy for the good Secretary in his hopes that the boys whose growth he watched might again lead the name of Rokeby upwards, and plant it firmly in a future as far distant as that long past it had adorned.

"Mine owne good boyes," the Secretary begins, "mine owne good boyes and best beloved cosyns, seeing that in these our times honest behaviour and faire conditions are soe far gone to decay . . . I have, therefore, thought good to help you forward to desire and by good and commendable meanes to deserve

honour or honestie, the faire and goode rewarde of virtue . . . to fear and abhorr shame and dishonour as the gates of hell . . . and now, good boyes, let my advice sinke into your hearts, when the vessel for the first season has taken the taste therof, for the most part it keepeth a very long time the savour. . . . You shold continually in all your doings have in remembrance that—thankes be to God—you are gentlemen, who, how they must be qualified, and in what comeliness behave themselves, read Solomon's Proverbs, the Book of Wisedome, Ecclesiastes, Ecclesiasticus, Tully's Book of Offices, Count Balthazar Castiglio of the Courtier." The choice of literature is notable. I do not know how many of these works a parent of to-day would put upon his boy's bookshelf. One at least among them, and that not the least useful, might be searched for long enough in English bookshops, though rightly popular in the days when Mr. Secretary Rokeby wrote. But the boys were not to rely only on their literature, however aptly chosen. They were trained to remember what their fathers were. "Thomas Rokeby, Lord Justice of Ireland . . . being controlled that he was served in wooden cups, answered that these homely cups paye truelye for that they conteyne. I had rather drinke out of these cups and paye gold and silver than drink out of gold and make wooden payments. Oh, my good boyes, forgett not this golden speech, and be ashamed while you live once to make soe worthy a gentleman groane in his grave at any your misdemeanours."

Thus impressively did the Secretary try to teach "mine owne good boyes" how to value what he had learnt to prize. I know not if the attempt was more successful than any other of the kind; yet I would fain think that the lads must have paid some heed to words so wise spoken with so great affection. And having spoken out his heart in brief the Secretary was careful not to bore them, but strewed his homily with anecdotes, and even wove into it the ballad of the felon sowe which "Raph of Rokeby, with full good will," gave to the fryers of Richmond.

I must give some extracts from this ballad in another chapter. In fact I will pick up the felon sowe on my way back to Richmond, and make the journey which proved perilous enough to

The Greta River.

poor Fryer Middleton, who was sent to fetch her. For the moment my face is set in the other direction; and when I can get away from Mortham and from Rokeby it is towards

Barnard Castle and the high fells of Teesdale that I shall set my course.

Reluctantly I turn away from the old border fortress, and leave the high banks and sloping woodlands all aglow in the rich reflections of the afternoon sunlight, and the Greta chattering down its stony bed to meet the louder waters of the Tees chafing in their rocky channel. The whole country is lit up with a golden gleaming—the hilly path, the wide park, the ancient trees, over all there falls a mellow radiance which is more beautiful than words can tell. And so I left this little fairyland and came out once more upon the road, that very highway, let us not forget, which Nicholas Nickleby, followed by poor Smike, trudged sturdily along, when, having beaten Squeers the schoolmaster and carried off his drudge, he set out manfully to seek his luck once more in a world which up to that moment had treated him but scurvily. Poor, lonely wanderers! They are not the least pathetic among the many memories and shadows on this ancient road.

I have spoken more than once of witchcraft and of occult practices upon the living. Now here at Greta Bridge not many years ago was found a pair of tablets which illustrate so luridly the manner in which the hate of families found vent, that I cannot pass it by unnoticed. Two leaden plates were dug out from a heap of stones on Gatherley Moor. They were carved with planetary signs and with the following inscriptions :—

"I doe make this that James Phillip, John Phillip his son, Christopher Phillip and Thomas Phillip, his sons, shall flee Richmondshire, and nothing prosper with any of them in Richmondshire." And on the other was this even more comprehensive aspiration : "I doe make this that the father, James Phillip, John Phillip, Arthur Phillip, and all the issue of them shall come presently to utter beggary, and nothing joy or prosper with them in Richmondshire."

This family of Phillip was one of property and standing. In

the early days of Queen Elizabeth they held an estate at Brignall, up the stream, and the owner of the land was James, who is given the place of honour in the evil wish recorded on the tablets. John Phillip, who made the spell, appears to be the representative of an elder branch, which had by some means been dispossessed by a younger one; and failing other remedies he took this dark way of avenging himself. It is easy to smile at the folly that supposes a few scratches on a plate of lead have any power to control events. But is there any one who would not feel some qualm of horror on discovering that a curse so awful had been levelled at himself? It is perhaps a mere coincidence that the fate invoked by John Phillip did indeed descend upon the family he cursed. All the male descendants named upon the plates died without issue; and the name of Phillip ceased to be known in Richmondshire.

I do not want to exaggerate the significance of this grim story of the past. I daresay it may be true enough that such curses were of very rare occurrence. Yet the inscription of planetary signs upon the plates suggests that they were made after a pattern which a man would not discover for himself; that they were in fact the work of some practitioner in magic, whose trade it was to gratify bad men with hopes of vengeance dealt out by powers against which no human foresight might contend. Possibly there may be many tablets such as these not far below that kindly veil of springing grass and future harvest which hides so many ugly things. Strange tragedies must have been played out in a lonely district where passions flamed so hotly and the superstitious northern fancy fed on solitude, on the whispers of the wind sighing downwards from the fells and the rushing sound of rivers at their flood. Here is none of the great silence of the midlands; but in the air there is a perpetual course of sound, now a summer trickling, now a winter spate, now a zephyr charged with scent of roses, now a bitter gale scattering dead boughs, wind and water always lifting up their voices in the wilderness, so that a man left alone with his own imaginings on

the summit of the fells might well hear in that close network of noises which overspread the land articulate speeches levelled at himself.

It is well known to those who dwell upon the banks of the Tees that the loud sounding river, in whose gorge the depth of water varies wonderfully, is inhabited by a malicious sprite, with long green tresses and an insatiable desire for human life. The children of the district know Peg Powler well, and many an urchin lingering behind the rest has run screaming after his companions at some fancied turmoil of the water betokening the rising of the sprite. There are vague tales of men beguiled to lonely places in the stream, and drowned beyond all hope of rescue; and how then should little children save themselves but by flight? Far down from the higher reaches of the Tees, out of the region of the great waterfalls whither we are tending, there are borne masses of white foam, whirling here and there upon the river eddies; and these, too, bear the name of the sprite, being called "Peg Powler's suds." Peg has her cousins in other Yorkshire rivers, as we shall see later; and, indeed, in a land where rivers are so many, and so very wild and beautiful, it could hardly be but that the fears and fancies of mankind should centre round them, and gift them with sentient passions like their own.

I run out of Greta Bridge beside the woods of Rokeby, and their cool shade follows me, dappling the road with brown and gold for a mile or more, till the way falls and rises and falls again without any striking width of prospect, and so at last runs out suddenly upon a bank, where I can hear the river chafing over terraces and boulders far below among the woods; while on the hillside rising on the left, swept clear of trees, there stands a group of buildings, of which one only sees at first that it is half farm, half ruin. Presently one perceives that the great empty window, all whose tracery is gone save four upright dividing shafts, has nothing in common with the barns and stables which surround it; and on looking further the eye is

caught by the foliated arches of two or three windows in a fragment of old wall, which must be presumed to have interfered but little with the operations of herding and sheep-shearing, otherwise it would doubtless have shared the fate of the rest of the desecrated building, where the heirs of Rokeby and Fitzhugh, and many another noble house, were laid to rest in trust that posterity would pay the dead respect. That trust was

Eggleston Abbey.

repaid by an outbreak of wild fanaticism which worked irreparable ruin, but which did less harm than the centuries of neglect and carelessness which have gradually robbed us stone by stone of the most beautiful and interesting buildings in this country. Who made it necessary to let rough farmers work their will among these priceless treasures, quarrying their stones for gate-posts, and tearing down screens and altars to mend rents in

their own houses? We speak sometimes indignantly of the barbarism of the past. Would it not become us well, ere condemning other generations, to see that cattle are not defiling those enclosures which were counted holy through many centuries? It is surely no great act of reparation that now, at least, the poor shattered remnants of what was once so beautiful should be dug out and cleared of brambles and rank growth of nettles, and placed in such a state that men who care about their beauty, and are interested in their history—there really are such people after all these years—may be able to guess the nature of that vanished grandeur without having their thoughts called off at every turn by the noise and interruption of a farmer's daily business?

I turn aside and stand upon the Abbey Bridge, a modern structure replacing one built by the monks, which in the early days when it was designed may have ranked as a considerable feat of engineering, so deep and precipitous are the cliffs across which it is flung, and so impetuous the boiling of the river in the rocky bed below. Standing here in the warm afternoon I can see Eggleston Abbey through a screen of trees, which trick me easily into forgetting all its desolation. Before me and beneath there lies at any rate a scene whose extraordinary beauty has not changed at all. I spoke of deep cliffs, and they are there, but hidden. For the dense growth of beech trees spreads its sunny shelter far beyond the limits of the rock which root them; so that all the shelves and reefs that border the brown waterway are lying in deep shadow, broken now and then by a flicker of little dapples that runs along the worn and fretted stone whenever a light wind stirs the trees. But if the rock terraces are in shadow the channel of brown moorland water is alive with light. Sweeping now into deep pools whose level surface is just marked by the force of the current flowing underneath, or rippled by a fish which rises lazily at the fat flies buzzing along just out of reach; now broken suddenly into streaks of brown and vivid foam, flashing and

quivering like jewels as the water flies and scatters over sharp juts of stone and the rough irregularities of the shelving bottom; there is no yard of the long vista down which I am gazing that has not a special and peculiar beauty. Here in this northern land the trees have not yet their full summer leaf. The ashes are still feathery. The sycamores splash the woods with red.

Eggleston Abbey from the River.

The oaks have here and there a vivid mellow gold, which I can follow in the sunlight far away down stream, where the fretting of the water is too distant to be seen as more than a bright sparkling underneath the trees which shade the Dairy Bridge and the confluence of the Greta and the Tees.

There are few river scenes in this country worthy to be matched with that which is disclosed from the Abbey Bridge,

bursting suddenly as it does upon the sight of every traveller, whether he come from Greta Bridge or Barnard Castle. It is the direct road to the latter famous town which most men follow from this spot, climbing the hill among thick woods and coming out at once upon the open ridge. But this is a mistake. For when the river is left behind that road has no interest at all, and it enters Barnard Castle through the unimposing outskirts of the town. I choose the better part, and loiter onwards by the bank of the river on the Yorkshire side, dropping down between the Abbey and a group of cottages, where early roses bloom pink and scarlet in the gardens, and a child carrying a pitcher to the river stops and gazes at me as if I were a wild man of the woods. At the foot of the hill a footbridge is thrown over the mouth of a stream which runs out of a lovely glen, while carts splash through the shallow sparkling water. The valley is famous in its way. Scott calls it . . . No, I will not succumb to a temptation I have resisted for so long. Let others search and see how the great wizard speaks of Thorsgill, if, like many a tourist in this region, they have "Rokeby" in their pockets; or, if not, let them more wisely wander up the glen alone, and use their own eyes in admiration of its elms and ash trees, and its pretty chattering beck. For my part I have no time to loiter here. The clamour of the river calls me on, and I follow up a hill, and over a steep ridge, till the road, rough and untravelled, drops sharply to the river, opening before my eyes the ancient town of Barnard Castle, and a prospect which grows in grandeur as I approach the bottom of the valley. For the rock of Barnard Castle has not the sheer height of Richmond, and is the more dependent on being seen from the proper aspect. I reach the foot at last, and cross the Tees by a high-pitched ancient bridge, whence the town looks feudal, old beyond all modern computations, while on the crag the shattered towers of what was once a strong and noble fortress rise in melancholy ruin.

CHAPTER IX

BARNARD CASTLE, TEESDALE, HIGH FORCE

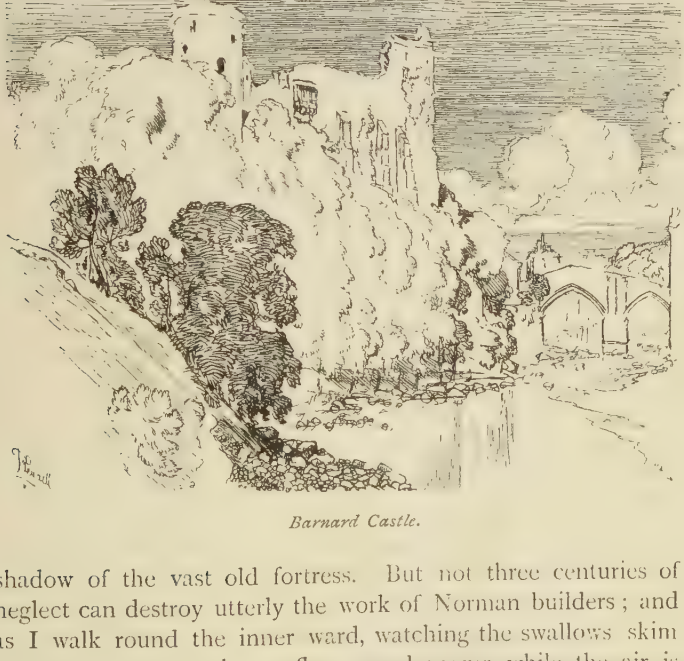
If any one desires to interrupt me at this point with the remark that I had no right to come to Barnard Castle, which is not in Yorkshire, but in Durham, I shall submit patiently to the rebuke, and answer only that the circumstance was not unknown to me. But when, I ask, did I ever promise to rein in my caprice, if she chooses to go cantering off outside my title page? Who cares for county borders? They were fixed for the most part by persons possessing neither taste nor judgment, and if I can improve on them I will. The unity of Yorkshire, the rotundity of my theme, demand a town of note and mark in this remote north-western corner of the county. Here is such a town, and shall I hesitate because stupid people in the past have declared that it is in Durham? There is a verity of romance and a verity of fact. I care not under which head I become entitled to Barnard Castle; and as a last word to my captious reader, I protest that he may account himself more fortunate than I expect if he be not carried into other counties before he gets out of the chariot to which my wandering fancy has been yoked.

I sometimes think that when one is so lucky as to discover a point of view from which an ancient town retains its mediæval aspect, or any trace thereof, it would be the part of wisdom not to pry any further, but to go away at once. Had

I turned after looking upward from the bridge at the quaint houses rising out of the brown, rushing river, at the Castle Crag, and the massive remnant of old keep which crowns the eminence, I should have had a fairer memory of Barnard Castle than the somewhat grimy, squalid, aspect of the town has given me. For while, as I said, it looks feudal from below, recalling, in some dim way, those hill forts surrounded by the houses of the retainers, which may still be seen unchanged in other and less settled countries, I am bound to admit that the whole illusion vanishes when one passes through the streets, marked visibly with the mean and unimaginative shops and buildings which distinguish most English country towns, however ancient. One house, indeed, there is which has some beauty and distinction; its style has been carefully avoided by all subsequent builders. A memory of Dickens clings about the "King's Head" Inn, and draws many a traveller to that roomy hostelry. Of the town itself not much else is to be said. It bears an evil reputation in the north—I have vainly sought to know why, for something piquant, doubtless, underlies the taunt which schoolboys used to fling at each other—and, perhaps, do still—"A coward, a coward of Barney Castle." Cowardice neither was, nor is, common in the north. What reproach can it be that fell upon the town in days so long forgotten that it lingers only as a childish taunt? One smiles at it, yet there is in truth something terrible in this long tradition of disgrace. Something happened, some heart failed in a sudden danger, perhaps but for a moment. The heart is dust, who shall say how many centuries ago? But the reproach is living. Is there no statute of limitations for a popular tradition? "In my own village of Edmundbyars," says Mr. Featherstonhaugh, "I stopped to listen to two viragos abusing each other. When vocabulary and breath were almost exhausted, what appeared the most pungent and irritating epithets were 'Barney Castle' and 'Bewcastle.'"

Well, let us go and see the Castle, which, broken as it is, has

still nobility enough to be impressive in itself, apart from all the striking memories which gather round it. Many a winter storm has sent great fragments of masonry dropping from the old untended walls, and sent them crashing down the precipitous incline towards the river bed, carrying with them, often enough, half a house, or the whole structure of some stable, as is told tearfully by those who occupy the dwellings underneath the



Barnard Castle.

shadow of the vast old fortress. But not three centuries of neglect can destroy utterly the work of Norman builders; and as I walk round the inner ward, watching the swallows skim in and out among the roofless guard rooms, while the air is filled by the singing of the river, just as in those days when men at arms and pages paced the courtway, and whispered secretly of the great stake which their masters set upon the

turn of fortune, I can still cheat myself into seeing once more the whole motley crowd of mediæval knightly life—the squires and ladies riding home from hawking, the monks, the pilgrims, the passing travellers in search of shelter, the packmen guarding their wares with difficulty from the greed of the rough soldiery—all these shadows of the past start up unbidden as I wander round the walls which Barnard de Balliol built in the centre of his fair heritage of the Forests of Teesdale and Marwood, with the lordships of Middleton in Teesdale, and Gainford, and all their royal franchises, liberties, and immunities—that noble heritage, I say, which William Rufus had given to his ancestors some eighty years before.

So there the Balliols lay and grew continually greater, till at last they dreamed of royalty, and into this old courtyard there came the glamour of a throne. For John de Balliol married with Dervorguill, heiress of the Constable of Scotland, whose mother was eldest of three daughters alone remaining in the younger branch of the royal house. So that when the elder branch died out, the Lord of Barnard Castle was next in descent to that crown which the northern barons coquetted with as often as they quarelled with their own liege lord at Westminster, and with which, indeed, at many periods they had relations scarcely less intimate. For in those days the frontier of the kingdoms was uncertain, and the feudal rights and titles of the two kings crossed and recrossed it in a very intricate mesh of rival obligations; so that the most single-minded of the baronage might well doubt on some occasions whether his duty ought to be rendered north or south of the Tweed, and would incline one way or the other at the bidding of a clear self-interest. Thus a Teesdale baron, who was also Lord of Galloway, and who carried in his veins the blood of Scottish Kings, was no foreigner in Scotland, and it was not incongruous that he should aspire to the crown.

How the lesser barons of the north must have flocked to pay their court to Balliol when the sunshine of this prospect

[*To face page* 178.

"*The Return from Hawking.*"

broke on Barnard Castle! How thick the pennons of Fitzhugh, and Bowes, and Mowbray, must have crowded down the narrow causeways, with those of many another noble house, all suppliant for the favour of him who might be King. The very pages must have cocked their caps a trifle higher, and added a few more tones of insolence to the swagger of their bearing when fancy showed them the broad fiefs of Scotland lying at their master's feet. For a while the house of Balliol was like a rosy cloud that catches the full splendour of the dawn. But a grey day followed. The support of England set John Balliol upon the throne he coveted, but it was given on conditions too hard for his compliance, and turned into hostility which brought the puppet king to ruin and a prison. That was not the end of the pretensions of his family, and, indeed, all the world knows the great story of the contests of Bruce and Balliol, both Yorkshire barons, for the Scottish Crown, and how England supported one or the other as pleased her best, and how great gain came to Scotland from the spirit and patriotism which that bitter struggle brought to life. But it was the end of the story so far as Barnard Castle is concerned; for the English King gave the confiscated fortress to Guy Beauchamp, Earl of Warwick, from whom it passed to the Nevilles, and so became again a centre whence on more than one occasion the interests of Kingdoms were directed, and plots discussed which ended in tragedies among the bitterest in history.

Ah, if these old castles could but tell their stories! What wondrous things should we not hear then of the turbulent Nevilles, and of Crookbacked Richard, who got this castle by his wife, Anne Neville, and concerning whom there will be more to say when we reach that great stronghold at Middleham, where he chiefly dwelt when visiting the north, which he loved and which loved him. But these are very ancient days into which I have wandered. It was the singing of the river which beguiled me, filling the air with a steady murmur which touches I know not what cord of fancy, making the past seem

far less distant and the old days real again. It is time to move onwards up the valley, where very noble sights are waiting; but before I go, I climb up to the ramparts and sit down on the warm stone, whence I can look out upon the river and the summer woods below, and across a wide and memorable prospect of broken sunny country, dropping gradually towards the east, but on the west rising into those great hills which culminate in Mickelfell and Crossfell, and the high ridge of Burnhope moors.

Reluctantly I turn away; and, as the road to Middleton is both long and hilly, I think it well to quaff a tankard before setting out. There is but one other occupant in the smoking room of the "King's Head." I greet him with the accustomed Yorkshire toast, "'Ere's to thee, may thee want nowt, me nother, nor nobody." And as the bottom of my tankard tilts up slowly, he bows solemnly and drains his own in acknowledgment of the courtesy. So I part with Barnard Castle on the best of terms; and run on past Lartington and Cotherstone under great fells and bare rough heights till I cross the River Lune at Romaldkirk, and in a little further the old town of Middleton is seen lying in a well-wooded hollow, out of which—having made the easy discovery that there is, in fact, nothing to see there—I pass by a road that mounts and mounts. The sky has grown a little sad since I left Barnard Castle, and a gusty wind sighs across my way, blowing at times with considerable force. The country has now all the aspect of the high dales, wide, grassy slopes, dropping into the broad valley from lofty moorland ridges, which, as I see them on this stormy afternoon, are swathed in angry shadows and obscured by driving mists. Wild, sudden lights fly along the hill crests from a sun which is not seen: a white cottage high upon the down catches the reflection and gleams out vividly, while the lower slopes are dark and sullen.

Still the road goes on mounting, and presently it makes a sudden turn which brings the river into sight, and gives a fine

backward glimpse of broken foaming water sweeping under a lofty precipice crowned with a few firs, gaunt and black against the skyline. Shelf by shelf the river bed drops in little terraces, over each of which the brown water pours with gathering force, making a long line of rapids, white and foamy, washing the base of the cliff in little whirlpools, and filling the quiet air with noisy sound. Such is the character of all the upper course of this most lovely river, a constant spouting of cascades ; and what is seen beneath this dark cliff is but a miniature rehearsal of the effects which rise to grandeur at High Force and Cauldron Snout.

The road grows wilder as it continues to ascend. What few trees the dale can boast are on the Durham side ; the Yorkshire slopes can show nothing but rough pasture and mere wastes of ling and heather; the northward limits of the great wilderness of Stainmore, which for many a generation bred nothing but the fiercest outlaws known within the limits of the north, which is a large thing to say. Over those heights came the road from Westmoreland ; and many a traveller in old days had cause to dread the lonely passage over Stainmore. Indeed, as I ride onwards watching those grim heights, a tale comes into my mind which illustrates so strangely the wild life of that most solitary district, that I set it down in full as I find it in the collections of the Folklore Society, to whose discriminating labours all topographers owe so great a debt of gratitude.

"Wild and varied as I know the superstitions of my native county to be, I must plead guilty to some astonishment at finding among them what Brand calls the foreign superstition of the Hand of Glory, once firmly believed in many parts of France, Germany and Spain. Sir Walter Scott brings it forward as a foreign charm. It is the German adventurer Dousterswivel who is conversant with it, and who describes it." But here we may break off a moment to remark that the clever rascal Dousterswivel does not describe it with sufficient accuracy or give the receipt so fully as to enable the unskilled practitioner to set to work without some further guidance : wherefore

the curious would do well to pay the more attention to this note. "The Hand of Glory is the hand of a man who has been hung, and is prepared in the following manner. Wrap the hand in a piece of winding sheet, drawing it tight to squeeze out the little blood that may remain. Then place it in an earthenware vessel with salt, saltpetre and long pepper, all carefully and thoroughly powdered. Let it remain a fortnight in this pickle, then expose it to the sun in the dog-days until it is completely parched, or if the sun be not powerful enough, dry it in an oven heated with vervain and fern. Next make a candle with the fat of a hung man, virgin wax and Lapland sesame. The Hand of Glory is used to hold this candle when it is lighted. Wherever one goes with this contrivance, those it approaches are rendered incapable of motion as though they were dead."

There! Now any one can make this so useful Hand of Glory for himself! So let us proceed to see how it was used on Stainmore. "One evening, between the years 1790 and 1800, a traveller dressed in woman's clothes arrived at the old Spital Inn on Bowes Moor. The traveller begged to stay all night, but had to go away so early in the morning that if a mouthful of food were set ready for breakfast there was no need the family should be disturbed by her departure. The people of the house, however, arranged that a servant-maid should sit up till the stranger was out of the premises, and then went to bed themselves. The girl lay down for a nap on the long settle by the fire: but before she shut her eyes she took a good look at the traveller, who was sitting on the opposite side of the hearth, and espied a pair of man's trousers peeping out from under the gown.

"All inclination for sleep was now gone; however, with great self-command she feigned it, closed her eyes, and even began to snore. On this the traveller got up, pulled out of his pocket a dead man's hand, fitted a candle to it, lighted the candle and passed hand and candle several times before the girl's face, saying as he did so: 'Let those who are asleep be asleep, and let those who are awake be awake.' This done, he

placed the light on the table, opened the outer door, went down two or three of the steps which led from the house to the road and began to whistle for his companions. The girl now jumped up, rushed behind the ruffian and pushed him down the steps. She then shut the door, locked it, and ran upstairs to try and wake the family, but without success. Calling, shouting and shaking were all in vain. The poor girl was in despair, for she heard the traveller and his comrades outside the house. Suddenly she remembered the Hand of Glory, ran downstairs again, seized a bowl of skimmed milk and threw it over the hand and candle, after which she went upstairs again, and woke the sleepers without any difficulty. The landlord's son went to the window and asked the men what they wanted. They answered that if the dead man's hand were but given to them they would go away quietly and do no harm to any one. This was refused, and the landlord's son fired among them. The shot must have taken effect, for in the morning stains of blood were traced to a considerable distance."

Such is the tale of the Hand of Glory used on Stainmore—a tale which is remarkable not only as comprising a superstition rarely met with, but also as throwing a flood of light on the conditions of life on these wild uplands, which lay almost beyond the reach of the law, slowfooted as she ever is and infected with the love of ease. Indeed, not only here, but all through the dales and moors of the West Riding, there are told dismal tales of murder, pointing to the days when travellers who carried things of value bore their lives also in their saddlebags, and had to take the risk of losing them like any other article of merchandise.

That this was the reputation of Stainmore in very early times may be seen from the records of the sanctuary of St. Cuthbert at Durham, to which I have already referred in proof of the warm-hearted friendliness which existed between that holy man and such dwellers in this part of Yorkshire as were prompted by their feelings to rob and slay. Thus, on

the 10th October, 1487, Adam Ewbank rang the bell of the sanctuary and claimed protection from the penalty of having slain a man on Stainmoor. It would be easy to multiply such cases. The men of Dent, far away towards the head of Wharfedale, seem to have had an evil aptitude for offences which needed the intervention of the saint. Doubtless they skulked across the moors this way, avoiding trodden paths and settled country till they were in sight of the bounds whence their pursuers could not snatch them. And as I have referred again to this matter of the sanctuary, I may as well mention a curious case which shows how unreservedly the monks sheltered even those criminals whom they must have most abhorred. In February, 1485, "James Manfeeld, late of Wyclif, gentleman, in his own person came to the Cathedral Church of Durham, and there, having rung the bells, urgently sought the franchise of the Church and the liberty of St. Cuthbert for having, near the village of Ovington in Ebor, together with others, attacked Dom. Roland Mebburn, Capellanum, Rector of Wyclif, and struck him in the body with one'le wallych bill (*sic*), and given him a mortal wound of which he died." If ever any man were turned away from the mercy of the Saint, it would surely have been the author of this atrocious murder; yet he was received like others, and sat, I presume, in the refectory among other fugitives who must surely have shrunk away from the wretched man on whose hands there lay the blood of a servant of the Church.

Wyclif and Ovington are but a little way down stream from Barnard Castle; and the learned editor of the Sanctuary Book of Durham remembered that in his childhood the ghost of a priest used to walk in a field between those two pretty villages, clad in a gown of rustling silk. So long does the tradition of a crime linger in solitary spots!

But that is an old story now, and in these days the only living things which go in dread about the hills of Richmondshire are grouse, for which the Teesdale moors are famous.

How those birds must dread the flowering of the heather! At last I come to a little roadside inn, of no great outward seeming, but worthy of full confidence, as many a traveller can testify who has arrived there wet and cheerless. Opposite the inn is a little wood, a wood of firs entered by a white gate which I

High Force.

am inclined to open, if only to discover for myself what is the cause of the great roar of falling water which occupies the air with a thousand times more power than I have heard yet from the river, noisy as it has been all the way from Middleton. But even as I turn to open the wicket I discover, with all the

shock of a quick surprise, that the fall is there, before my eyes. Over the wood I see it, placed more beautifully than the most cunning artist could devise. Upon the sky line there is a green hill scarred with patches of black ling, and sweeping downwards with a fine abrupt descent until it meets a jutting shoulder of the moor which cuts across it; while from their intersection there sweeps out the wide brawling river, flashing gloriously in a sudden burst of sunlight, and sparkling on for some half mile till suddenly it meets a lofty precipice of scarred grey limestone, forces itself with a quick contraction into a channel scarce ten yards wide, and plunges over in one grand leap of turbulent brown foamy water into a dark pool not less than sixty feet below, while the scattered broken spray of that great descent blows out like smoke from behind a screen of jutting elm trees.

Yorkshire, that land of rivers and of rivulets, has many waterfalls, and not a few which are of memorable beauty. Hardraw is loftier and more exquisite; Aysgarth has a charm of form which persuades one to forgive its lack of height. But neither can approach the grandeur of the mighty leap which carries Tees over this huge precipice; and High Force remains without a rival, the glory of Yorkshire and of Northern England. An hour after I had absorbed my first impression, I opened the white wicket and strolled down among the fir trees. A shower had fallen and the raindrops glittered on the heavy spreading boughs. There was an exquisite freshness in the air that blew down from the great moorlands, keen and stimulating, and full of summer scents; while from time to time the fragrance of wild hyacinths came down the woodland path, for on this high ground spring flowers linger, and even primroses had not vanished from the open spaces where the fir trees fell away and left the wild flowers free to grow and spread.

A sharp descent brought me to a rustic bridge thrown over a small stream which rattled down between high banks, and the path, sweeping round towards the left, came out upon the river

bank, but high above the water, which was scarce seen through a fringe of trees and bushes, while the sound of its harsh brawling was drowned by the thunder of the fall. The path was overarched with beeches and dwarf oaks, while the wood stretched exquisitely up the hill upon my right, carpeted with moss and brown droppings from the boughs, broken here and there by a grey scar of jutting limestone. Across the river I saw through chance openings of the trees, a towering cliff, and at its foot a stretch of broken stony grass land, for the stream swept close beneath the path which I was following, and in a moment more a sudden gust of wind sent a whiff of spray across my path, and I was in full sight of the brown fall and the deep pool which receives it.

The mighty volume of the water which falls into that chasm of brown and wavering lights is for the most part carried under by the force of its descent; so that the basin beaten into foam and whirlpools where the water drops, yet washes gently round the base of the vast limestone buttress through which the river ate its way above, and in which it has carved out little caverns down below. The peat-stained water comes down in every shade of yellow; the face of cloven rock, half hidden by the drifting spray, has given root to moss and lichen; the dark fir trees topping the ravine, the rustic paths and steps dropping to the water's edge, the indescribable fresh scent of falling water mingled with the odour of wet woods, and the keen air of the northern evening—all these combined to stamp the picture of High Force upon my mind in colours which are still so bright that they return upon my memory unbidden, tempting me northwards with that strange attraction which even men of the south country feel who have once opened their hearts to the music of the rivers and the wind sighing down from the distant moors.

It is not very long ago since I congratulated myself on the advantages of rapid travelling. I meant what I said at the time. I am sure I must have done so, but now my mood has changed, and I am all for sauntering. The truth is, since I

struck the Tees at Dairy Bridge, I have learned to love its rapid flashing course, its pretty wilful wanderings through moor and meadow, its petulant splashings over little rapids, its sparkles and its eddies, and all the wanton carelessness which sends it gushing here and there up to the very brink of the great fall over which it rolls in thunder, and goes on sobered for a mile or so till it emerges from the dark ravine, and forgets the terror of that mighty plunge, and frolics on as gaily as before. And, indeed, I should ask nothing better than to follow on up stream till I pass beneath Falcon Clints, that sheer range of Basalt Cliffs, which skirts the road, and come by Caldron Snout, where the river plunges in a short half mile down a series of inclines three times the height of High Force ; though, lacking sheer descent, they are to be judged as rapids rather than as waterfalls, and have but little of the grandeur of that noble cataract: and so climbing the hills where Tees subsides to a mere trickle in the heather, I should gaze out over the great Alps of Cumberland and Westmorland, magnificent beyond anything in Yorkshire. Yet it is as well that I have not time to prolong my wanderings in this direction, and must turn away down stream, for in Yorkshire dales one is apt to loose all sense of grandeur if one remembers the elevations of a true mountain country ; and it would be easy to destroy the admiration of these wild moors which, while my eye has no other standard, I can count quite satisfying.

So I travel back lightheartedly down the valley, swallowing the keen air which makes it good to live, and warmed by the sunlight, which is bright enough in the valley now, though the great shadows which sweep downward from the hills and chase each other over the hollow, promise wet jackets for those who stray too far from shelter. One by one the remembered landmarks glance by me in the sunny morning, and it is still far on the pleasant side of noon when I see the ruined pinnacles of Barnard Castle standing black against the sky, while a long streamer of white cloud floats steady like a pennon from

the very summit of the keep, bringing back into my mind again that gallant, hopeless "rising of the north," when "all the flower of Northumberland" came to seize this ancient stronghold, and I go on humming to myself:—

Lord Westmorland his ancyent raisde,
The dun bull he rays'd on hye,
And three dogs with golden collars
Were there set out most royallie.

Erle Percy there his ancyent spread
The half moone shining all so faire;
The Nortons ancyent had the crosse,
And the five wounds our Lord did bear.

I protest I had forgotten this rising of the north, so rash and headstrong in its inception, and so tragic in its consequences, the last blow struck by the great feudal lords of the north country on behalf of the old religion which was slipping from men's hearts, and on behalf also of their own power which was being undermined by the advancement of new men to the high places of the realm. It was in the first winter of those twenty which Mary Stuart spent a prisoner in England that the turbulent began to gather round her name; and Sir George Bowes, one of the few men of great family whose heart was wholly with the Government, reported day by day, in letters which are still extant, his observations of the growing agitation round him. He was in command of Barnard Castle; and as that stronghold lay upon the road from Raby, where the Nevilles chiefly dwelt, to Topcliffe, which was a favourite seat of the Percies, Sir George saw all the comings and the goings between those two noble plotters, and knew more about all the stages of the insurrection than any other man.

In November, 1569, he wrote to the Earl of Sussex at York: "I have certaine advertysements that all reteyners and household servants appertening to the Erle of Westmorland, with the most part of all others, his tennants, beying furnished with armour and weapons of his Lordship of Raby, in their war-

like apparel, repaired to Bransepeth yesterday. . . . Ther is great fear upon these doings newly grown in these parts." On the 8th he reports that Northumberland himself had passed through on his way to Topcliffe, and on the 10th he has more decided news to send. "This day in the afternoon the Erle of Northumberland, armed in a previe cote under a Spanish jerkyn, beying open so that the cote might be seen, and a stele cappe, covered with grene velvet, is returned to Bransepeth, with VIII. with him all armed with previe cotes and dagges; and in another company returned to Bransepeth Francis Norton and divers of his brethren. . . . And in the third companye returned Markenfield, and in this companye thirty horse, all armed in corselets under jerkyns. . . . Marvelous fear aryseth in these parts, for they passe in troppes, armed and unarmed, so fast up and down the contrethe, that no man dare well stir anywhere."

How picturesque are these notes of the gathering of the forces for the great rising! Bowes had no troops with which he could venture to restore order; and his part was merely that of a spectator, yet of one who saw the gibbet dangling in the background ready for many a one of those who rode by so gaily in their Spanish jerkyns and caps of green velvet. On 17th November the whole host marched by Barnard Castle in open rebellion, and Bowes reported that the Earls would lie that night at Northallerton or Ripon, that they had promised to attack him on their return, but "I trust, by Goddes helpe, the old adage in them shall be verified, 'God sendeth an evyll-willed cow with short hornes.'"

In truth, the horns of those who directed this unwieldly enterprise were not long enough to be very dangerous. Bowes had taken the measure of the leaders accurately. They celebrated Mass at Ripon and elsewhere; they marched to Tadcaster, and then, with marked infirmity of purpose, changed their design and marched back to Durham, where they laid siege to Bowes in Barnard Castle.

Bowes was a good soldier, and made a stout defence, but he had to deal with mutiny and treachery within the walls, as well as with an overpowering force without. He says himself, "I found the people in the castle in continuall mutinye, seaking not only by great numbers to leape the walls and run to the rebels, but also by all menes to betray the place and all in ytt to the rebels. So far as in one day and nighte two hundred and twenty-six men leapyd over the walls, and opened the gates and went to the enemy; of which number," he adds, gleefully, "thirty-five broke their necks, legges, or arms, in the leapyng."

Of course the rebels took the castle, but, while they lay besieging it, the army of the south was gathering at Doncaster, and when Sussex marched out of that ancient town, the Earls, not waiting for the attack, dismissed their infantry and fled with their horsemen into the wild country of the border. It was all over then. Nothing remained but to hunt down the fugitives and hang them. It is a ghastly tale. Bowes was Provost-Marshal, a stern and pitiless avenger of the Queen's wrongs and his own. How pitiful and futile it all is! What noble lives and what far-stretching family traditions were broken and wasted in this rising, when the very life and spirit of the north went down in ruin and utter destruction.

I shall refer again to the closing scenes of this rebellion, so closely interwoven with the family history of the north. For the present I may not loiter any more. Did I not promise to drive the "felon sowe" from Rokeby with me towards Richmond; and do not all men know—or, if not, it is full time they did—how troublesome that most wanton daughter of many wicked pigs proved to men who are far holier than I, and commanded spiritual resources to which I can lay no claim?

It is not unknown to many that there was a Friary at Richmond. Ere nightfall we shall see the very goodly tower, which alone remains of all the buildings. They were Grey Friars who dwelt there, well known throughout this country, much respected and, perhaps, like other ecclesiastics, a little feared: so that

most of the surrounding gentry took occasion to make them gifts from time to time, and Ralph of Rokeby, having a sow which he did not want, courteously and kindly presented her to the friars, and notified to them that they might come and fetch her when they pleased.

Now, this sow had certain defects of character, besides being quite unusually large. The ballad writer says of her :

She was more than other three
The griseliest beast that ever might be,
Her head was great and grey ;
She was bredd in Rokeby Wood,
Ther was few that thither yood,
That came on live away.

I know of one just like her. But more of that hereafter. Now these being the qualities of the felon sowe, it was only natural that her owner should have thought her very suitable to be presented to somebody else ; and thus we read :—

Ralph of Rokeby, with full good will,
The fryers of Richmond gave her till
Full wele to gar them fare ;
Fryer Middleton by his name,
He was sent to fetch her hame
That med him since full sare.

Everybody must respect a cheerful giver, and we need not grudge to a man of such generosity the satisfaction which, knowing the habits of his sow, he doubtless derived from watching secretly the reception which she gave the friars. Somebody must have been looking on, or how should we know what passed? Well, Friar Middleton brought with him Peter Dale and Brian Metcalfe of Bear in Wensleydale, and they all came smiling cheerfully, going "at ther will," as the poet puts it, till they came to Greta Bridge.

These three men went at ther will,
This wicked sowe while they came till,
Liggand under a tree.

Rug and rustie was her haire,
She raise up with a felon feare
To fight against the three.

Now, in this first round, the sow, being, perhaps, taken by surprise, had chosen her ground incautiously, so that after a short skirmish she backed suddenly into a kiln, in the astonishment of which mishap she permitted her enemies to noose her and haul her out and set off on their homeward way, in the cheerful trust that nothing now remained except to make the sausages. But the sow was revolving other plans, and did but go softly till she thought the proper moment had arrived. It came at the foot of a little hill, and then the friars saw the sow in her true colours. I do hope Ralph, the cheerful giver, was not too far off to see all this.

And there she made them such a fray,
As if they shod live untill domesday
They colde it never forget.
. . . . . .
She chasèd them both to and fro,
The wight men never were soe woe
Their measure was not meete.

But Peter Dale was not dismayed. He perceived that the difficulty, and the whole outrageous behaviour of the sow, must proceed from the fact that she had not observed their cloth, and took them to be hinds, not friars. For did not even the crows on Lindisfarn obey St. Cuthbert? Should, then, a grovelling sow disdain a friar of Richmond. Not so. Peter stood firm.

He seigned him with crosse and creed,
Tooke forth a booke, began to read
Of Saint John and his gospèll.

Unhappily the sow was baser than he thought, and persisted in sinning against the light.

The sowe she wold no Latin heare,
But rudely rushed at the freare
That blenked all his blee.

I do not know where Peter went when the sow ran at him with such ferocity; but I conceive he was either on the safe side of the hedge, or perched in a tree when he made the following pitiful lament:—

He said, alas, that I was freare,
And I shal be tug'd in sunder here,
  Hard is my destinie;
Wist my brethren in this houre
That I were set in sike a stoure
  Yett wold they pray for me.

While Peter chanted this doleful lay from some safe refuge, the sow was busy settling accounts with his friends.

This wicked beast that wrought the woe
Tooke the rope from the other two,
  And then they fled all three.
They fledd away by Watling Streete,
They had no succour but their feete,
  It was the more pitye.

So they went, and the sow trotted back triumphantly to Greta side. Ralph, the cheerful giver, saw her coming, and judged from the bit of rope still hanging from her neck that there had been some trouble. The ballad writer admits as much as that; but as I have suggested already, I suspect Ralph of having watched the whole.

I am sorry I have not space to tell what happened when the friars got back to Richmond with their woeful tale: but as most of my readers may have sympathy enough with a bonny fighter to desire to know the end of the sow, I will quote a few more lines which give the tragic close of so much strength and truculence.

The warden waged on the morn
Two boldest men thas ever was born
  I weyne or ever shall be.

Gilbert Griffin was the name of the doughtier of these two heroes. The sow showed him no respect, but ran at him with

no less ferocity than she had exhibited towards Peter Dale. But Gilbert put his trust not at all in Latin, but rather in his own good thews, and they achieved the better result.

Then Gilbert greeved was so sare,
That he rave off both hide and haire,
The flesh came from the bone.
All with force he feld her there,
And wanne her worthily in warre,
And haud her, him alone.

And kest her on a horse soe high,
In two panniers well made of tree,
And to Richmond anonne
He brought her. When they sawe her come,
They sang merily *Te Deum*,
The fryers, every one.

Happy friars to get their sausages at last! Thrice happy Peter Dale, to behold his enemy going into the frying-pan and stew-pot! This pleasant story has beguiled the long, dull course of Watling Street. Already I have turned out of the long, main road into the pretty village of Gilling; and now there lies before me the steep ascent of the ridge which hems in Swaledale—a pretty road, passing by the woods of Aske, that famous house whose very name recalls one of the most tragic of north country stories, and which in later days has won a happier repute as the home of true sportsmen and kindly gentlemen.

Road to Richmond.

CHAPTER X

RICHMOND AND EASBY

It is once more a stormy evening ; and as the grey clouds darken down over the gate of Swaledale, I find myself upon the castle bank at Richmond, following a path which curves around the foundations of the ancient Breton fortress, just where the masons set them on the solid rock, and gripped it tight with bonds which seem as if they must outlast the world. High over my head the old walls rise firm and solid still, their worn grey outlines broken by splashes of yellow gillyflower, and by jutting ivy bushes, where the nesting birds fly in and out beyond the reach of any enemies not having wings. Far down below me on the left the Swale rushes over boulders with a pleasant splashing ; and following its course with my eye against the stream, I see three arches of a grey stone bridge flung across

the waterway, and beyond it woods falling rapidly on either side and fringing all the banks up to the point where the river seems to issue from the hills, which close down grandly with already a suggestion of those stern and lofty ridges which gain for this river valley the character of the wildest among all the Yorkshire dales.

It is a matter of much concern to me that I can nowhere get a distant view of Richmond Castle. Turner did it ; and many

Richmond Castle from the River.

people know the grand result. For my part, I searched vainly for a point whence I could see the full outline of this very noble building at any distance ; and having at last relinquished the attempt, I have come to sit upon the castle bank, and consider the place as Providence and the Norman builders have made it, which is much more sensible than climbing feverishly up hill and down hill to discover whether Turner told the truth.

For some reason the castle walk is deserted. Perhaps the Richmond people are at dinner. Perhaps they distrust that watery sun which, shamed and beaten by his enemies, is just now dropping down towards the wet woods, while a fresh wind steals out of the foldings of the hills, and stirs the hanging ivy by my head. It comes down from the moor, that little wind ; it has the scents of gorse and standing pools among the heather, and I know not what sweet smelling things which I shall find for myself to-morrow when I follow up the river past the woods and out on the bare downs, where the hills close sharply round the narrow valley, and the sheep call and answer to each other from the opposite heights. Just so it blew, I suppose on many an evening when the Bretons dwelt here in the fortress above my head, with all their followers from across the sea, who descended on Richmond in such a cloud, as the old song tells us, keeping alive old grudges as is usual with songsters,

> " Each came out of Brittany,
> With his wife Tiffany,
> And his maid Manfras,
> And his dog Hardigras."

It would surely have been more blameworthy if they had come without their wives, since come they must. It was William the Conqueror who brought them, so old is the grievance ; for he gave Richmondshire to Alan of Brittany, and though that fair inheritance was confiscated as often as the English kings differed from their Breton cousins on any point of consequence, yet it was always restored again, and many a generation went by before Hardigras ceased to bark about the hilly streets of Richmond, or Tiffany to scold in her harsh Breton tongue up and down the courtyards of the castle.

But it is very necessary in things historical to begin at the beginning ; and I have the less excuse for having wandered off to Bretons since there lies somewhere within arms-reach of me, that is to say, in the bowels of the castle rock, a much more

notable and famous person, to wit King Arthur, and not he alone but all his knights. Let no one interrupt me with foolish tales of Glastonbury, or of a Cornish chough which flies around the shattered walls of Old Tintagel waiting the awakening of Merlin, the enchanter, and the word of power which will set the blameless king once more in human shape upon the throne of

Richmond Castle.

England. These tales are very good for the West Country, and when we go there we will believe them. Here at Richmond it is well known that Arthur and his knights lie sleeping in a cave at the base of this great rock; and many a boy has spent his summer afternoons in wandering by the river's edge in the hope that he might find the winding entrance, long since lost and forgotten by the world, and look upon the sleeping knights who

sought the grail and tilted in the forest, and sinned and suffered for it so many centuries ago.

One man did find that entrance. Long ago, I do not know how long, there dwelt a poor butt in Richmond, a rather loutish fellow, who was not much use to any one, but who, like other ne'er-do-weels had perhaps his dreams and fancies, little though they might profit him in those prosaic days, when cobbling would have served him better. His name was Potter Thompson; and one day, having quarrelled with his wife, Potter was wandering about the base of the castle rock, in some wonder why he did not choose some deep pool in the river and drown himself, when he noticed an opening in the cliff which seemed to penetrate a long way, and he went into it with a sort of idle curiosity.

The passage widened out as he advanced, and it was not dark; for a faint light shone upon the rock walls which must come, he thought, from crevices open to the day. But when he groped a little further, and the light grew brighter steadily, he thought he might have reached a guard-room of the castle by some old forgotten postern; and he went on boldly, for if that were so, he might get a sum of money in exchange for the secret. At last he turned a corner suddenly and stood at the entrance of a lofty cavern, which stretched away so far on either hand that even the bright light of the lamp hanging in an old cresset from the ceiling could not scatter the thick shadows, nor reveal the limits of the cavern. Underneath the lamp there stood a stone table, on which were laid a gigantic sword and such a horn as Potter Thompson had never seen before, rich and wonderful with gold and ivory. Now this was what Potter saw in the first moment; in the next he distinguished huge figures of knights in armour lying asleep on the floor of the cavern, and among them one who bore on his helmet a crown of gold, and lay breathing gently in his slumber as if he dreamt of none but sweet and pleasant things.

So Potter Thompson, the poor fool, stood and held his breath and watched them, while his heart beat heavily and his scared wits told him he was looking on a sight that never living man had seen before. There lay King Arthur and his knights, sleeping, as he had known they would be found, waiting for the hour when England called for them. And as he watched that

Richmond.

strange and noble sight the desire grew eager in him to carry off some proof that he had indeed beheld it; and he stole on tip-toe to the table, and laid hand upon the sword and horn and lifted them, and was stealing back towards the gloomy passage which had brought him thither when the dark vault rang with a clash of steel, and a knight turned over in his sleep and raised himself upon his arm, and fear seized on Potter Thompson,

and he dropped the horn and sword and fled. But as he went a loud voice mocked him, crying at his back :—

> " Potter, Potter Thompson !
> If thou hads't either drawn
> The sword, or blown the horn,
> Thou'ds't been the luckiest man
> That ever yet was born."

So Potter Thompson went, and lost his fortune because his heart failed him. Rarely does a second chance come to a man who cannot grasp the first, and Potter never found again the winding passage which had led him into the bowels of the mountain. It is a long sleep which the blameless king has slept since Potter saw him ; but no one doubts that he lies there dreaming still. Some day the busy world that spins so rapidly will have leisure to remember him ; England will demand her hero king, and in that hour it will need no Potter Thompson to penetrate the hill and wake him.

I suppose it is no more than natural that in the neighbourhood of so great a fortress men should find their imagination somewhat stirred by the knowledge that in the course of ages many passages and chambers have been walled up, blocked or forgotten. There are few great buildings in the north to which some such story does not cling, some tale of buried treasure watched by enchanted powers. I shall have one notable story of the kind to tell when I reach Kirkstall Abbey ; but here at Richmond such traditions are the more inevitable because there are said to be in truth passages leading from the castle underneath the river, and one too which strikes off down the stream in the direction of Easby Abbey. Once long ago—who ever tries to date these stories?—some soldiers quartered in the castle resolved to test the truth of the old tale that this latter passage ran to Easby. They were wise men ; their campaigns had taught them prudence ; for they perceived the dangers there might be in creeping through a long closed passage, blocked at least in part by fallen masonry, and doubtless

[*To face page* 203.

"*Selected a small Drummer Boy.*"

reeking with mephitic vapours. So they resolved to run those risks vicariously, and selected a small drummer-boy, such a boy as could be replaced with little trouble to the regiment, and who, moreover, could creep through almost any crevice larger than a mousehole.

Perhaps the boy was glad enough to go, eager like any other urchin to make discoveries, and having his head full of King Arthur, whom he might very well find and win the fortune that Potter Thompson had let slip. So he went boldly enough into the dark vault, carrying his drum before him, and when the prudent soldiers who had sent him stood and heard the last echo of his drumming die away beneath the ground, they went up again to the castle courtyard, where they heard it plainly coming from below. And so the muffled rolling of the drum, played by the stout-hearted little lad below, led the soldiers out of the castle gate and through the steep streets of the ancient town, sounding fainter and more distant, till at last when the men stood upon a spot outside the Grammar School, which any child in Richmond will point out, the drumming ceased. It did not die away and become inaudible by degrees. It stopped suddenly, as if the lad had ceased playing; and listen as they might, they never heard him beat again.

I know not, nor can any one tell me, what it was that stopped the poor child's drumming. Perhaps he found King Arthur and lies there sleeping with him at this hour. Perhaps . . . but why speculate on what remains a mystery? Yet there are those who say that if you stand upon this spot at night, when the streets are quiet and the lights are out, and only the loud singing of the river fills the air, you may hear, very faint and distant, the long rolling of a drum, some signal, surely, from the child who lies forgotten in dark caverns of the earth, some appeal to those who go about in fresh air and see the clear skies of the upper world.

While I sit upon this castle bank, telling myself these strange old stories, the evening sun has broken through the clouds

again, and sent a flood of gold light down upon the woods, filling the bend of the river where it issues from the hills with a yellow haze which clings to the plantations, and reveals their colouring, and flashes warm and soft from the broken water. Presently the glow has reached the bridge, which it touches with a flush that quivers on the stone till the whole of the parapet and arches are enveloped in the gleaming. Then the western sky turns rosy, and flecks of gold appear upon it, and the river catches the reflections and casts them back so that all the waterway is full of colour. I had thought of going up to see the castle, but on such an evening who could give his mind to machicolations or stone curtains? The valley looks like fairyland. I will wander down to Easby, where at every step I can look back and see the great castle and the strange old hilly town all reddened by the sunset.

A winding lane leads me down the flank of the steep rock past the handsome church, till I have almost reached the river's bed, when it turns up through a wood and crosses the fine cliff, running high above the river, which is heard rushing noisily below, and is seen flashing through the cool shade of elms and beeches. On this still evening the wood is beset by birds—thrushes singing nobly on the highest boughs of the tall trees, remembering their fullest notes in these first days of summer, while from every bush and shrub that clings to the rough surface of the cliff there comes a constant chirping, which is both melodious and cheerful. Presently the path leads out of these brown shades, and runs beside wide water-meadows where the hills fall back to a little distance from the stream leaving lawns of exquisite fresh grass, broken by woods, all wet with raindrops and glowing in the sunset, while through the clear air there rings the whistle of a blackbird, rejoicing somewhere in the warmth and light.

These are the meadows of St. Agatha, or rather I should say they were her property, for many a day has gone by since any one in Richmond has cared a jot for St. Agatha or for her

canons, whose white robes used to flit so often up and down the river banks, but who went away for ever so long ago. But here is their old abbey, still not quite destroyed ; its grey walls running down so close to the little belt of shingle over which the river washes that there is no more than space for a path between the two, and when Swale is in flood, and the snows are melting on the highlands above Reeth and Muker, the old

Easby Abbey, Richmond.

canons must have heard the water on many a night lapping round the walls themselves, and threatening to sag through into their halls and cloisters. For Swale, which ripples down its stony bed so brown and cool this summer evening, is a turbid raging torrent on some days of winter, when the black clouds break, and the first breath of spring frees the courses of the becks, and each one leaps down tumultuous and angry to

lash still further the turmoil of the swollen river in the valley, and the storm wind coming out of the west piles the waters up on their course down stream.

But it is not the power of the waters which has wasted the Abbey of St. Agatha. Neither storms nor years would have torn away the vaulting, or cast down the massive pillars of the church, had not man, prompt to ruin his own noblest works, shattered the whole structure without compunction. Nothing but the eye and knowledge of an expert, trained in all the lore of monkish life, can trace out among these broken walls the locality of the great chambers which were once so full of busy life, the Frater house, the Refectory, the Abbot's dwelling, all silent, grass-grown and deserted, while in the centre of the enclosure the visitor looks out wondering over a vast expanse of grass, almost bare of masonry, which by gradual reasoning he perceives to be the church. Here, where one grey stone crops up out of the fresh turf, must have been the springing of the arches at the entrance of the choir ; and a few steps further on, shorn of all the pomp of stone and heraldry which marked them, lies undoubtedly the dust of many a knight of that great family of Scrope which gave to England freely generation after generation warriors and statesmen who take rank among the noblest in our history. "Above the choir," said the Abbot of Easby, nearly two hundred years before the Dissolution, above the choir it was that Sir Henry Le Scrope lay buried "under high stones, and upon the stone a knight graven of stone and painted with the arms azure, a bend or, while near him lay Sir William Le Scrope on a high tomb all armed, and many others of their lineage were buried under flat stones, and upon the same stones are flatly graven their images for sculptures with the arms."

Now this evidence was given on a great occasion ; and as it is useless to look for any of the tombs the worthy Abbot named, the green grass having covered over more desecration than one cares to talk of, I think it will be well to say very

briefly what all the pother was about, since by dwelling on this tale for the little while we loiter round these beautiful old ruins, we shall get some true idea of the greatness of the Scropes, who still provide the noblest memory among these dales, and whose castle must set the idlest visitor wondering who it was that built it.

I feel almost apologetic for the credit of the Scropes when I say the whole coil was about a coat of arms. Of course, in these days we know better than to worry about such a trifle. Any one who wants a coat of arms takes down "Burke's Manual" and selects the first that strikes his fancy. Public opinion smiles indulgently, while the College of Arms shrugs its shoulders and goes to sleep again. I hope no one will despise the Scropes too much because they cared for their coat armour as much as for the honour of their wives. William le Scrope, in one of the French wars, was for killing a prisoner whom he found accoutred in his bearings.

It was, I think, on one of the Scotch expeditions in the reign of Richard II., that Sir Richard le Scrope found a Cheshire knight, named Grosvenor, bearing the shield, "azure, a bend or," which he and all his forefathers had carried into the thickest press of every battle for more years than any one of them could count. Now, it happened that but a little time before, a Cornish knight, named Carminow, had fought in France under this same shield, and when challenged by the Scrope had been able to show so long a title, stretching back, as the record says, to the days of King Arthur, that the heralds had no choice but to leave both Carminow and Scrope in possession of the shield. But when Grosvenor, an unknown knight for the days were yet far distant when the heirs of this knight would beget a dukedom—when this fresh claimant started up with no long record of great services behind him, Scrope summoned all the noblest of the land to testify that these were indeed his ancient bearings, and that he, not Grosvenor, had carried them to honour in the past.

So there came old John of Gaunt, "time-honoured Lancaster," followed by Henry Plantagenet, the Earl of Derby, and gave witness that the arms were Scrope's, and that of Grosvenor he knew nothing. Behind them came Lord Poynings and Sir Thomas Percy, Sir Hugh Hastings, and Sir Thomas Erpingham, weighed down with honours, he who afterwards commanded the archers at Agincourt, and gained honour in every employment which he took. They were followed by Lord Scales, and Courtenay, Earl of Devonshire, in whose veins there ran the blood royal of the House of France,—all having seen the golden bend on the azure field borne high in battle by the Scrope. And then came Sir John Sully, that old and noble warrior, whose years were then past one hundred, and had seen Sir Henry le Scrope bear those arms at Halidon Hill, when the English bowmen broke the Regent Douglas three and fifty years before, and had seen Sir William bear them, too, at Cressy and at Poictiers, and had fought side by side with Sir Richard in the sea fight of Espagnols-sur-Mer and at Najara, and knew no other bearings of the Scropes in all these fights, and many more, save those which were now unjustly claimed by Grosvenor, whom he did not know. And when these, and vast numbers more, had stated what they knew from service in the field, there came forward the Abbot of Selby, who said the arms were on the south aisle of his church, in a glass window, at the altar of St. John the Baptist, and had been there "since building of the church, which is beyond memory. And the Abbot of Rievaulx had ancient charters sealed with those same arms, while the Abbot of Jervaulx said the arms were in divers places in his abbey, in glass windows and in paintings. The Abbot of Byland said they were painted in divers places in his abbey, and the Abbot of Roche said they had been painted in a glass window in the north part of his church beyond the time of memory. The Abbot of Coverham said that Sir Geoffrey le Scrope was interred in the body of his church before the high cross in a

lofty tomb with the effigy of a knight, while other witnesses testified that the arms were painted in the priories of Gisburgh, Wartre, Lanercost, Newburgh, Bridlington, and Watton.

Such was the fame and so wide the power of the Scropes in those old days. Nobody, I suppose, credits the monks of all these abbeys with having blazoned the Scrope arms in their churches out of love. Monks received favours. They did not confer them, save in return for good hard value; and the family which could enrich so many different foundations must have been powerful indeed. Grosvenor gave way before this weight of evidence; and his arms were altered to "azure, a garb or," which device the ducal family of Westminster yet bears,—while the line of Scrope has perished off the earth.

I shall have more to say about the Scropes when we reach their castle in the heart of Wensleydale. It is enough for the moment to know that this roofless abbey, this church with never a wall, holds the relics of many members of that house, who were respected by the monks of Easby as founder's kin, though that was in truth by purchase only—much in the same way as the major-general in "The Pirates of Penzance" obtained his ancestors. Over the hills from Bolton must have come many a long funeral train, led by the white canons of St. Agatha, winding down the long dale till it reached this ancient house of God, where for many a day the canons sang "messe, placebo, and dirige, and messe of requiem," both for the soul of the last comer into the haven of their church, and for those of his ancestors who had attained that port before him, while in the great castle away across the hills other Scropes, looking forward to the future of their house, foresaw no time when that splendid refuge should not be open to receive their dust.

Well, it is the birds who sing "placebo" now, above the lost tombs of the Scropes; and out of the Abbot's Elm, which spreads its great branches still above the spot where many a monk has drowsed away the summer day, there comes a perfect witchery of sound, such a fluting of liquid and melodious notes as sets my idle fancy wondering whether it is, indeed, a bird

which sings so nobly, or if it may be that some echoes of the long silent music that used to float up from the windows of the church are lingering still among the broken arches. I turn away from the great empty space which was a church. The ragged shadows of the broken transept slant steadily across the grass, they lie thick and heavy in the Frater house ; and presently, when the heavy tolling of the curfew from the old tower of Trinity in Richmond shall boom across the valley, the lights will be already out in the Abbey of St. Agatha, and the night, which hides all ravages, will have folded round the ruined home of many warriors and saints.

As I wander back through the river meadows towards Richmond, I feel an impulse of gratitude to those who have kept the Abbey of St. Agatha so reverently. It is not always so in Yorkshire, or, indeed, elsewhere.

I think that no one who comes down out of the wood that covers Easby Cliff, well though he may know all the banks of Swale, can fail to pause a moment in sheer wonder at the magnificence with which the great square keep rises over the red-roofed houses and the broken outer walls of the old fortress ; while, if he be a stranger, and see for the first time that lofty crag and the stern buildings that surmount it, he must surely recognise that he has here to do with something nobler far than the ruins he has seen elsewhere in Yorkshire, that it is, indeed, the dwelling of a reigning family that confronts him, rather than of a noble, however powerful. Many a banner which could summon followers sufficient for a little army was borne proudly to its tributary station in the great hall of Scolland. The blood-red fesse of Marmion fluttered there, and the chevronnels which were the ensign of Fitzhugh, and the gold and azure of Fitzrandolph of Middleham. There, too, were the shields of Fitzalan and Fitzrobert, and many another owner of a vast estate, all rendering feudal service to the great Duke of Brittany, who was also Earl of Richmond, and owner of the fairest territory in the whole north country. How many of those who read "King John" remember that this was the

heritage of Constance, whose ill-fortune forced from her that dignified lament, "Here I and sorrow sit," and of her son, that little Arthur, whose eyes Hubert was ordered to burn out, and who met with so piteous an end? But if I stay here sentimentalising about such very old stories I shall be too late to see the curfew rung—I say see advisedly, for there is no difficulty in hearing it from any part of Richmond, and if it were not that I want to see what effect it has upon the people in the market-place, I should not trouble myself to hurry up the steep street as I do, until I emerge breathless and flushed upon the wide, sloping, hilly place, paved with atrocious cobbles, on one side of which the ancient church of Trinity displays proudly its tower and its tobacconist.

The Richmond people point proudly to this last possession as unique; and, indeed, I think it is. I do not recall any other church which has its own tobacconist cuddled comfortably up in its very bosom. At some distant period—possibly that convivial age when churchwardens, dropping all austerities, gave their name to long clay pipes—Trinity Church yawned asunder in its very middle, and took in the tobacconist. There he is to this very hour, wedged in between the body of the building and the tower, a true prop of the establishment, and to connect himself with that great institution by ties of office, as well as by those of bricks and mortar, the excellent tobacconist either does or did ring the curfew at morn and even; while, as the tolling in the morning is fixed by ancient custom for the silly hour of six, when none but foolish people are astir, he has the bell-rope brought out of the tower down beside his bed, and, waking up, rings lustily and goes to sleep again. Dear tobacconist, from the bosom of the church! How close these little touches of humanity bring thee to my heart!

The square is almost empty. The few honest citizens who stand about in knots are, I presume, waiting only till the "gathering bell" booms out from the tower to break off their gossip and go home to bed. Eight sounds from the steeple. At the fourth stroke a little old man comes scurrying round the

corner and rushes into the belfry door. He has hardly whisked his body out of sight when the last stroke sounds, and on that instant the sonorous clanging of the curfew peals out over the old town, a little wild and unsteady at the first, as if the guiding intelligence that grasped the rope was a trifle out of breath, but settling down to a deep, solemn note, which resounds over the empty market-place, and strikes upon my ear with all the lost significance of past days. But the worthy citizens of Richmond heed it not one whit. Their talk, their very jests go on unbroken, without even a glance at the belfry. Not one evinces the least desire to go home to bed; and even a party of small children playing hopscotch treat the mediæval admonition with true modern contempt.

The last stroke of the curfew dies away; and once more I can hear the rushing of the river. Since there seems to be no compulsion to go to bed, I turn out of the market-place, and stroll up to the town of Greyfriars, whither Friar Middleton brought home the piteous tale of his discomfiture by the felon sow of Rokeby, and where, not much afterwards, he had the joy of seeing her turned into sausages and brawn. Very nobly the rich perpendicular tower rises against the night sky, but of all the other buildings, the church, the cloister, the offices erected by this order sworn to poverty and a life of mendicance, there remains no more trace than they themselves could have shown of the realisation of their vows.

"A frere ther was," says Chaucer, "a wantown and a merye," and he goes on to say of him that—

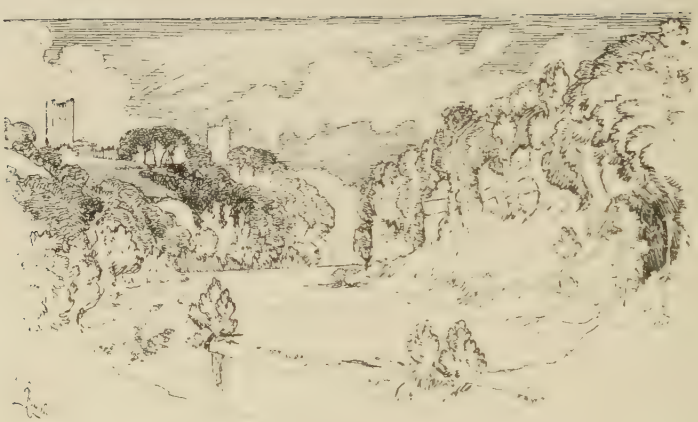
> "He knew the taverns well in every town,
> And everych hostiler and tappestere.
>
> . . . . . .
>
> He was the beste beggere in his hous,
> For though a widewe had nocht oo schoo,
> So pleasant was his in principio,
> Yet wolde he have a ferthing or he went."

Such were the friars as Chaucer knew them—half knaves, half wandering minstrels, haunting the taverns, carrying the

news and gossip of the day from town to town, and dropping it distorted as they pleased at lonely houses, where no other rumours ever came from the outer world; terrible enemies for any Government, able to set whispers running like a flame all over England, and to stir secretly an agitation which could not be either checked or traced, because it burrowed underground. Such was their action when the report arose that the poor King Richard was not really slain at Pontefract, but was living still in Scotland; and if we could now trace out the secret history of the devoted risings which disturbed the first years of the House of Lancaster, we should surely find that from Richmond, and many another friary of the Franciscans, came those wild rumours and those disturbing fancies that brought to the block the great Archbishop Scrope, with others far too noble to have spent their lives on shadows.

Yet the Franciscans suffered too; for if they were mischievous they knew how to die, and eleven of them suffered the penalties of treason for this very matter. And when the Dissolution came, and the dreaded visitors arrived proffering the new oath of faith in the monarch as supreme head of the church, the friars of Richmond stood fast in their allegiance, and as a penalty were driven into the world without those scanty pensions given to ecclesiastics who foreswore themselves. Therefore there is honour to their credit as well as mischief; and if the two be mixed, what is that other than the mingled thread that twines in every one of us?

Ah, strange old Richmond! how many ghosts go about its hilly streets! The moon is up, the pinnacles of the old Friary Tower are marked out in shadow on the silvered roadway. I go back through the market-place, and turn down the hill for one more sight across the noisy river. The hills are dark, the woods are scarcely seen, one twinkling light comes from the old castle wall, the broken water of the river seethes and flashes like a living thing, and the cataract below the castle is all of frosted silver.



Approach to Richmond.

CHAPTER XI

SWALEDALE AND THE PASS OF BUTTERTUBS

Ah, strange old hilly Richmond! True centre of the romance and feudal grandeur of northern England! How firm a hold she lays on the imagination, and how loudly she calls us in these happier days to recollect the husbandry of strength and skill with which the first growths of English life were tended, or all the legacy of chivalry and greatness handed down to us by those who occupied these walls. It is not here, in sight of the great squared keep, that one can lose the sense of unity with old past days, nor forget one's sympathy with the passionate hot life which was so very human, which blazed so fiercely and fought so nobly, and passed away at last with such a cry for mercy as one may see even now on a battered tomb at Eggleston:—

> "Jesu, for thi passion sere,
> Have mercy on the sinful here."

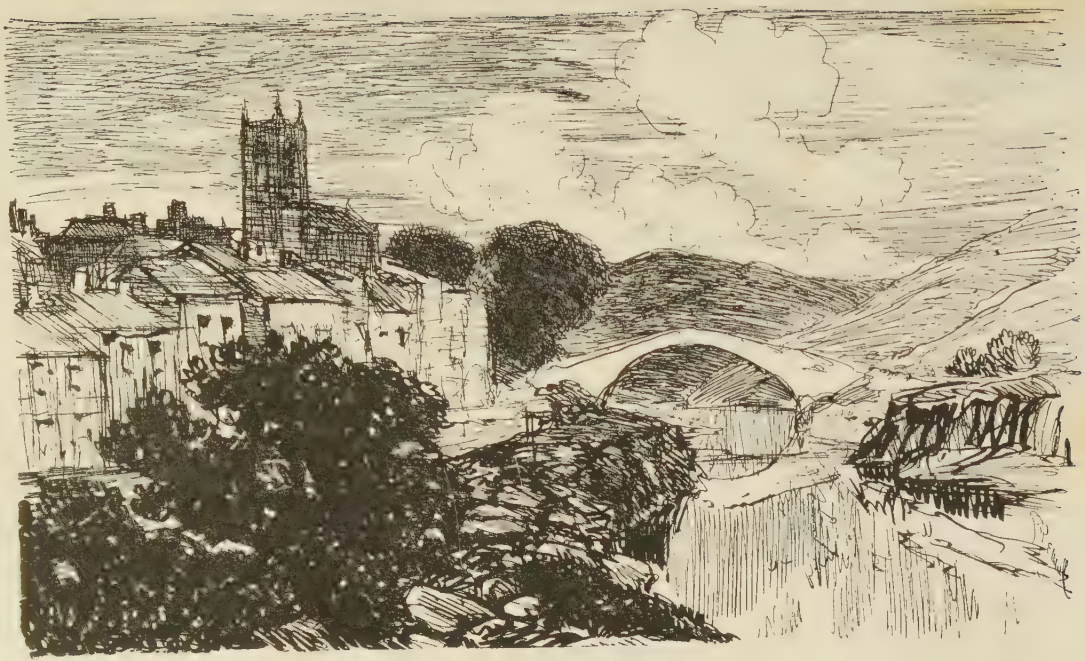
But it is time to shake off all these fancies and turn my back on the Castle Crag, and see what Swaledale looks like on this bright windy morning, which sends vast shadows flying quickly over hills and river, so that the water, which is black one moment, in the next is flashing brown and foamy in the sunlight, while the woods turn from dark to golden and from gold again to dark so suddenly that the whole valley seems alive and quivering with light and motion. I ride on through the valley, following one of the loveliest of roads, of which, indeed, I should say much, were it not that I have lingered so long already on the lower reaches of the Swale, and must hurry forward to the higher valley and the noble Pass of Buttertubs. And so I let the woods go by with their brown and dappled shadows, and ride past the shallows, where the gravel sparkles brightly under the quick-flowing water, and the rapids where the river makes such a merry splashing that it seems to strive against the rustling of the woods, which shall add the most to the great murmuring sound that fills the valley, till the trees grow thin and fall away from the river, and the hills sweep down with great bare flanks of pasture scarred with patches of brown moor and ling, between which the sheep stray up and down cropping the short sweet grass, while here and there the sunlight flashes on the white and silver of a beck tumbling from the heights, leaping from point to point of the outcropping rock. And so I come at last in sight of the old square-towered church of Grinton, set beside the stream at a spot where dale and river both divide, Swaledale throwing out an arm which takes the name of Arkengarthdale, from the tributary stream that winds among the narrow pastures left below the rugged range of hills. There is an old stone bridge, in the shadow of whose buttresses the trout lurk idly on these summer mornings; and from that spot it is but a little distance to the sloping irregular expanse of green round which is built, in a somewhat purposeless way, the little town of Reeth.

I am sorry that in this solitary townlet I could find nothing

worthy of comment save a pig. Pigs, as Friar Middleton knew to his cost, are not in all cases beneath the dignity even of verse; and it would be mere folly to conceive my own poor prose too lofty to concern itself with them. Besides, there may be those who give no credit to the tale of the Felon Sow, but read it with a shrug of wonder at my ready faith in the prowess of a beast which usually frightens only rather small boys. If such there be, I beg them to go to Reeth, where they will find in the piggery of the "Buck Inn" a beast which will restore their faith in Friar Middleton and me, in addition to curdling their own blood with fear, if it be let out into the yard for their greater admiration, as the too kindly owner did when I beheld it.

I do not mean to dwell on this incident, nor to comment on what occurred when this large and fearsome beast, "rug and rusty," like her prototype, began to sniff about the yard. I prefer to let the whole matter pass. Life is too short to tell the tale of our defeats; and how I fled from the field of any battle is nobody's business but my own. Let me get on to the aspect of the hills, which indeed occupy all one's thoughts at Reeth, and stamp themselves upon my memory so clear and lucent that I can see no other pictures when I turn my recollections backward to that spot.

Around Reeth the hills close in a sort of amphitheatre, open only to the west. On all sides the ground drops swiftly from the brown scarred moors into the width of three fields of pasture, with one more beside the river in the narrow bottom, where the water courses brown and swift, while here and there a patch of gravel sparkles brightly in the sunlight. Never was any light more soft and bright and beautiful than that which bathed the slopes of the high dale on this June morning. For the aspect of the day had changed; the conquering sun had driven the white clouds down to the very borders of the sky, and left them piled there in great masses, save when one escaping floated suddenly up over the blue vault and sent a



Muker.

flying shadow far across the hills, and was caught and chased by the eager wind and forced back to its prison with the rest. So the shadows slept upon the hill-tops, while the lower moors were in fresh bright sunshine ; for the keen delightful wind was blowing low, sweet with the odours of hawthorn and the scent of flowing water, while here and there the slopes were all aglow with campion and forget-me-not and a thousand other flowers. By Gunnerside the road crosses a brown beck flashing downward from the highlands, and so turns to the other bank of the river, which brawls along beneath a lofty cliff rising sheer out of the broken rapids ; and a little further on the air is shaken once more by the musical splash of falling water ; and there high up on the ridge, where cloud shadows lie, and sheep and cows are grazing over the grassy fells, a brook flings itself down some sixty feet ; while far below, where the dell is filled with trees, it makes a second headlong leap, and so comes out beside the buildings of a little farm, bringing with it the sparkle of clear mountain air and the breath and odour of the moors.

Through such sights and sounds I loitered up the dale. Now at a point where the swift water had swept in close beneath an overhanging bank, leaving on the other side a wide expanse of gravel, dry and whitened by the sun, a quick flash of silver shot across the river bed, and the next moment it flashed again a little higher up, doubling to and fro along the surface of the water and gleaming brilliantly. A great white bird, not unlike a gull, was fishing in the stream ; and presently I saw its mate sitting on a spit of sand, and the two soared off together up the stream, now lost among its windings, now flashing into sight, till they passed away beyond my vision into the deep recesses of the hills that look towards Keld. But always when I think of Swaledale, and see again the river winding through its narrow flats and the cloud shadows sweeping over the great hills, there rises into the middle of the picture the glorious flashing of the wings of those two fisher birds, adding I know not what that is cool and exquisite and fresh.

As I trudge on up the valley, the aspect of the little farms, each nestling in its hollow of the hills, calls back to memory the day when I gained a friend in such another farm, not here, and yet not far from here ; and the tale may serve as an instance of that simple hospitality which is common still among the dales.

I was weather-bound one day in early summer at a town a little west of this. Late in the afternoon, tired of watching the heavy showers blow past the windows, I started on my way ; but the walk was wet and cheerless, and I was not sorry when a cart stopped by my side and the driver offered me a lift. I looked at him. He had a face of exceptional kindness, such as invited instant confidence even from a surly dweller in great cities ; and I got into the cart and sat beside the tall old farmer with a sudden feeling that something warm and friendly had risen up out of the cold rain and clinging mist which were beating once again across the road.

In his slow way the old man insinuated many questions as to my journeys, and finding out at last that I was expected nowhere, his face broadened into a large smile, and he said, "Then tha'll come hoam wi' me" with such an obvious delight in having found an unexpected guest that I had no mind to make excuses ; and we drove away off the main road which I had been following, as friendly a pair of comrades as any in the north country.

He was a Quaker, the old man told me, and he had much to say about the decadence of that once numerous body of simple, upright men among the dales. The ancient meeting-houses rarely, on any first day, held more than a handful of worshippers, though he remembers them crowded. Presently we passed the meeting-house of his own village, a grey old building on the hillside, bearing an early seventeenth-century date above its little porch, and looking down the long valley through which we had come something in the manner of a sentinel set to watch. Almost in the bottom of the valley lay the old man's farm ; and

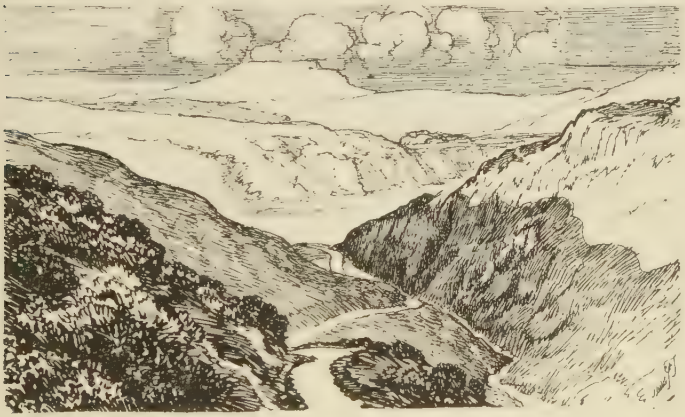
as we uncurled ourselves, cold and rather stiff, from our seats in the market cart, the house door opened, letting out a glow of light and warmth from a ruddy kitchen fire; and in the doorway, backed up by the bright reflections from pots and pans which shone like mirrors, stood a little rosy-cheeked old woman, clad in the grey shawl and spotless cap which still, in solitary places, proclaim the Quaker. The aged collie, who had risen slowly with a toothless bark of welcome, sniffed suspiciously about my heels; but the old woman beamed, and when her husband brought me up, saying, "This is a friend, and he's coom to stay t' neet wi' us," she held out her hand and shook mine warmly, saying, "Thou art very welcome, friend;" and so took me in, a stranger, out of the wet evening into the warmth and light of her cheerful home.

Dear, kindly people! I can still see the little parlour lighted up, the great chair in which the farmer always sat drawn over to the hearth, and another smaller one set close by the arm. There, after a few vain efforts to ensconce me in the seat of honour, the old man placed himself with the comfortable action of a man who, after hard toil, finds himself resting in a familiar spot; and by his elbow sat his old wife knitting. "She likes to sit there while I read," he said, with a half suspicion that the propinquity might need some explanation to a stranger. As for the little Quakeress, she looked up and smiled without speaking, for it was not her habit to talk much.

So they sat all the evening in the little dimly-lighted room, while my host talked to me of the things which were next his heart. And so I see them still in my memory, sitting side by side in absolute content, a pair of happy, placid people, for whom life held no difficulties any more, and who had no wishes save to enjoy the evening of their days together. There were long tracts of silence, during which the old man lay back in his chair, and his wife looked up smiling as often as she caught my eye; and in the end a supper of milk and cheese was brought in, and I went to rest in a room where the old mahogany four-

poster was polished like a mirror, where the sheets smelt of lavender, and a lilac bush beneath the lattice window filled the room with sweetness all the night.

In Swaledale it is always the sound of falling water which call back one's wandering thoughts. I have paused to rest beside a little stream of wondrous beauty. Across the field, where two or three ashes grew together in a clump, I first saw it gleaming silver in the shadow; and a little lower down it ran



Butter-tubs Pass.

beneath a bridge in the prettiest cascade imaginable. The fall was of trifling height, no more than three or four feet; but the water shot over it in a curve so full and copious, and fell into so brown a pool below, between banks so cool and mossy, that there was more delight in watching it than one finds in many a stream of far greater volume. A large ash tree drooped over the little fall, and on a grass bank just beside the bridge a few sprays of forget-me-not twinkled azure in the shadow. The very splashing of the water seemed to reduce the growing heat,

and I loitered on the bridge, glancing unwillingly at the high moors over which my road must go to Hawes.

For I am drawing near the boundary of Yorkshire, and ere long shall find myself in Westmorland unless I turn. There is but one way to turn, and that a sad one, namely, over the road of Butter-tubs, misnamed a pass. For may one justly give that name to a stony track which spares you nothing save a few yards of the very highest summit? The road of Butter-tubs climbs and climbs with a deadly steepness which one might pardon were it possible to boast of having attained any height, when, breathless and exhausted, one lies full length upon the heather at the top. But great Shunnor Fell is little more than a poor two thousand feet, and Lovely Seat, which faces it, is even less. Why, then, can one not get up without all this pother? I am told it is a very ancient byway; and that may be true, for it is certainly decrepit, and is not likely to be restored to health by any such desultory sprinklings of sharp-pointed stones as I found strewn about its surface, unless by persuasion or by force more travellers can be induced to cut their boots upon them than are disposed to use the road at present. In sober truth I met nothing but a sheep, until, coming out upon the very summit, I turned a sudden corner of the rock, and found reclining in the cleft a battered grey old shepherd, musing through the afternoon upon God knows what, while his pipe sent up a blue curl of steady smoke, and his collie stood at bay and snarled at me a few yards further on upon the path. The fellow looked at me with a half humorous smile. Had he spoken, I should have lit a pipe and sat down beside him, glad to chat with any one upon that lonely height. But he offered me no greeting; and I went on past the growling collie, while all the thin air of the vast solitude was pierced by the pitiful crying of a lamb somewhere in the valley bottom far below; and, presently, looking backward on my path, I saw the shepherd plunging down the side of the ravine in search of it.

A little way before I reached the summit of the pass—before,

that is to say, I had risen high enough to see the wide mountain country which lay beyond the green fells over which I was climbing, I found by the wayside the first of those circular

The Butter-tubs.

chasms in the limestone which gave the pass its name of Butter-tubs. Cool, dark, and cavernous, they are deep, black pits, walled by very strangely splintered limestone, standing now in crumpled pillars towering out of the sheer depth, now

breaking into fantastic shapes of every kind, with here and there a flowering alder, or a mountain ash growing out of a crevice, or some sweet white flower straying fearlessly down into the abyss. Into the largest of the Butter-tubs there trickles down a little stream, sobbing quietly enough as it oozes out of the long grass and struggles through the boggy patch between the slope and the descent; but plunging down the dark chasm with a kind of startled cry which sounds eerie in the great silence of the fells, and so drips out of sight among the shining liverwort, and falls in spray into the bowels of the earth.

There is something in the sight of this small stream tumbling out of the cheerful sunlight, away from the green hillside into unknown caverns of the earth, which fascinates me. Then the Butter-tubs are not mere shallow rents in the crust of the great hills, but the mouths of some vast subterranean hollows, huge untrodden chambers in the heart of the fell which I had thought so solid. I look askance at them as I go by, marvelling to note how near the gaping mouths lie to the roadway, whence a man following this pass by dusk or dark might easily stray off the rarely trodden path, and know no more until he found himself lying somewhere in those caverns into which the stream descends. That man must have little dread of solitude who would come this way in winter, when the early night may catch him on the hillside. Pedlars travelling out of Westmorland, or hawking their wares up Swaledale and down Wensleydale, must many a time have been benighted among these fells —poor, weary men, with valuable packs! Was there never any shepherd lurking on these crags who would enrich himself by a sudden blow? Tales of lost pedlars wander all around the Yorkshire dales, where for so many centuries every housewife was dependent on their coming, and every child watched through the dull days of winter for the playfellow who could crack a droll jest, tell a merry story, or sing a ballad with as much readiness as the strolling minstrels of older days, whose modern representative he had some claim to be.

There is no smoke without fire; and when I hear so many tales of pedlars who vanished on the moors, I know that here, as elsewhere, human nature has been acting after its predatory kind. Sometimes the story speaks of a sudden gunshot, or of a few bones dug up, or found bleaching on the moor, years afterwards; while, as if to suggest that life and death among these wildernesses ran in no other channels eighteen centuries ago, there was found on Fremington Hagg, above Reeth, the pack of some travelling Roman artisan, whose silver-plated horse harness and the other gew-gaws which he hawked from camp to camp may now be seen in the York Museum.

I suppose there will be some who, not knowing much about the matter, will declare that the suggestions I have thrown out are a slander on the people of the dales. To confuse any such objectors and to establish my good faith, I will draw on a queer storehouse of forgotten tragedies, published by the Surtees Society, which contains one tale at least which is very much to the present point. In December, 1666, the depositions of James Hutchinson were taken at York Castle, respecting certain events which had occurred upon the moor between his home just over the border of Westmorland and the town of Askrigg which lies away below me in the valley of the Ure. "In spring was two year he went from his own house with one Thos. Whiteheele to seek for two young horses on the moor; and being parted, he heard a voice cry out, 'Murder,' and did verily believe he heard the sound of a blow given and two other men's voices, and after a little while he saw a horse with a riding saddle on his back coming towards him, and a man following him on foot; whom he asked if he saw not two staggs, and he said, 'Noe.' Then this informant said unto him, 'You have sure been fighting, for you are all bloody,' though he saw no blood on him, and that man replied, 'Noe.' . . . And this informant went into a place called Hollow Mill, and looked down into the gill and saw two men standing together with their backs towards him, and something lying on the ground as if it were cloathes,

and saw Whiteheele, and told him what he had seen and heard, ... and at the latter end of summer they went unto the moors to seek their staggs again ; and coming near to the place where they saw the two men bearing something, they began to look about, and in a water hole to their thinking they saw the ribs of a man sticking in the bray, which when they had moved with a staffe fell into the water and swome, and then this informant did conceive there was the corpse and head of a man with hair on it. . . ." Pah ! that is quite enough of this ghastly story. Few people, I imagine, will care to pursue the matter ; and fewer still will venture to declare, in the teeth of such plain depositions, that there is exaggeration in the wild rumours of the fate which overtook lost pedlars on the moor.

Upon my life I am sorry for the pedlars, but if people will carry precious packs in lonely places . . . and really this hill-side, which I thought I had surmounted, is too steep to leave me any expansive sympathy for others, however luckless. If I carried a pack, I should certainly hurl it down the deepest of the Butter-tubs ; even my unladen back creaks and remonstrates against the unnatural steepness of this most vile and stony road. Each green ridge attained reveals another ; till at length there projects above the grassy slopes something blue and sulphurous and distant which is clearly no part of Shunnor fell ; and quickening my pace, I find I have reached the top ; and standing in the clear air and sunshine underneath the noisy larks which mount and mount even from that high ground as eagerly as from any cornfield in the valley, I see spread out before me a vast hill country, a wilderness of blue ridges and of shadowy summits, basking in the steady light of the afternoon, and stretching infinitely far into the west, with alternation of crumpled hollows and wide open valleys gashing the mountain sides, where my eye loses itself in mazes of green pasture land. There stand the huge flanks of Ingleborough, that flat-topped table mountain on whose plateau old nations in forgotten days kept watch and refuge ; and there too is the elongated ridge of

Whernside, and the hump of Pen-y-gant among a crowd of other summits less well-known, but notable and fine. It is a wild and lonely scene. Far as the sight stretches, the great slopes lie very bare; and even grazing animals are few,—here a couple of horses, there a flock of geese.

Such is the aspect of the head of Wensleydale to-day, though good roads have traversed it for full three generations; and, as I look down on the wide green valley, the white steam-cloud of a train travels slowly up the sunlit fields. Before the roads came, or the iron horse began to scatter news and strangers indiscriminately, how solitary must the life have been within these highlands! Was it not here that two brothers, escaping from the rout of Charles Edward's army in the '45, took refuge, in security that the arm of law would not reach them; and planted Scotch firs at the gate of their house, that any other wanderers of their own faith who came that way might know that men loyal to a lost cause dwelt there? And across the valley it is but a little way to Dent, of which place in old days the monks of St. Cuthbert at Durham held so sad an estimation. For they were turbulent men who dwelt at Dent, a law unto themselves, as any one of us might be who found no other law that pleased him; they were men who were a thought too ready with their knives, and they looked to St. Cuthbert of Durham to get them out of all their troubles. Not in vain did they trust to the loving kindness of the Saint, who, in his unwashen days at Lindisfarn, had learnt to sympathise with all the failings of humanity. So many a lad of Dent scuttered over these hills and cast himself upon St. Cuthbert's breast, while his pursuers stood and gnashed their teeth at the outer limits of the sanctuary.

Dear days of old, when guilt was washed away so lightly, and merry England was studded with refuges for the erring! But it were well to curtail these pleasing backward glances, and get down out of the mountains, for the way is long and winding, and Hawes, the first town where I can rest is yet a great way

off. Besides, it is not really easy to go down hill, though many people think it is; and when the steep path slips and slides with loose stones at every step, the descent is hard and painful. But it is done at last, and when the moor is left behind, and I come down into the first trough of the valley, just where the undergrowth of woods appears in refreshing contrast with the bare uplands through which I have been climbing, I turn aside by a few white cottages, and find a mountain stream no more than three feet wide, tumbling noisily over little ledges in the rock, and washing swiftly up among the ferns which overhang its bed and the long grass which grows between them. Up the banks, and down to the margin of the beck, there grows a host of bluebells, and the sunshine dropping down in dapples through the trees that almost meet overhead finds out golden patches in the waterway and sets them gleaming. A flagged path goes beside this pretty beck, a cool refuge from the glaring sun; and as I loiter onwards in the fragrant shadow, I find here and there a little bridge flung across the stream where some inducement lies to idleness, some still, brown pool out of which the water clatters with renewed impetuosity, or a small cascade over which it roars with sudden force, while the valley, which at first was shallow, deepens continually, the trees grow higher, and the moor is lost to sight. So the little stream brawls down the wood, gathering volume as its channel drops, and casting off its pretty wilfulness more and more, till at last it collects itself into one smooth, gleaming shoot, and leaps down six and ninety feet into a black pool below.

There is something in the aspect of this great cliff, this sudden stair breaking the monotony of the steady slope from the highlands to the level of the Ure, which is singularly striking and impressive. Conceive a precipice of lofty, blackened stone, curving round in a wide amphitheatre, absolutely sheer; and at its midmost point a slender stream shooting out into mid air, far away from the face of the cliff, a tangled column of fretted spray, broken at first into the semblance of filagree

Venetian glass, intricate and silvery, but disintegrating as it falls, till at last it scatters into nothing more than a cloud of spray blown into the black pool, which lies waiting for it among large boulders at the foot of the descent.

This is Hardraw Force, and its beauty lies at the mercy of time. For there was doubtless once a day—dear heaven, how often have the leaves budded and fallen since then! Perhaps it was even before the first Roman pedlar came across the hills! —there was a time, I say, when this beck at Hardraw did not shoot out into mid air as it does now; but finding the face of the cliff at the very moment when it touched the edge, splashed and struggled down the surface of the rock, tumbling from ledge to ledge perhaps with beauty, but certainly without its present grandeur. Now, while the top of the cliff is of hard limestone, its face is of softer stone, and as the moorland water bit and bit upon this shale, tearing away and dissolving now one fragment, now another, the rock dropped back from the level of the shelf above, so that now the fall is projected far in front of the precipice, and touches nothing till it attains the bottom. Yet in course of years, or centuries, the whole process will begin again; the stability of the shelf will be endangered; some day it will crash down among the boulders in the lower valley, and the stream, like a creeper seeking for support, will once more help itself down the black face of the rock.

When I climb down to the foot of the fall I find a rather gloomy valley, through which the stream courses on under dark limestone scars, topped by heavy firs, through which the slanting sunshine of late afternoon hardly finds its way. The roar of the fall rolls through the deep hollow: and as I turn I can still see its silvery column, quivering and scintillating with quick lights and flashes, which put odd thoughts into a man's head if he sit and watch it, and let the monotonous voice of its descent touch his fancy, as it surely will. But the afternoon is gone already, and the growing clearness of the hills warns me that I have but little time to loiter. And so I pass through the gate

Hardraw Force.

at the bottom of the gorge and go down into a lane which conducts me quickly through a tiny village towards a field path cutting over level meadows, where the Ure meanders with a slow, steady course, differing strangely from the mountain freshness of the Swale, or the loud rushing of the Tees over its stony bottom. Here, upon these wide water meadows, from which the hills fall away on every side, there is the silence and the fruitfulness of a lush midland county: and the gold light of the westering sun touches nothing swift or animated, but only the forms of red grazing cattle, and the slow stream slipping on between the fields. At a little distance over the grass and the silent river lies the town of Hawes—it looks better when one is not very near—and beyond the dull grey houses rise the long range of rounded hills which, pierced by Bishopdale and Coverdale, and a dozen other glens, each rich with its own separate and striking beauty, part the valley of the Ure, this famous Wensleydale, from the lesser Nidderdale and the green Craven Hills.

To me, after so long wandering over rough mountain country, all this soft fertility is as pleasing as the sight of palmtrees to an Arab in the desert. For there is still the sense of solitude, and aloofness from the world. Thoughts, habits, and manners have yet their own decided stamp in Wensleydale, and one may still hear the herdsman counting his sheep with those old numerals which he applies to nothing else, and which may be the last trace of Celtic speech lingering in his mind, so open to traditional impressions and so impervious to change. *Yain*, *tain*, *eddero*, *peddero*, *pitts*, so one who told me heard the shepherds counting in a fold on the hillside near Askrigg, a little lower down the dale; and having thus reached five, the hind went on: *Tayter*, *later*, *overro*, *coverro*, *dise*; and then, as the eleventh sheep slipped, frightened and bleating through his rough hands, he shouted out *Yain dise*, and so on up to fifteen, which he called *Bumfitt*, while sixteen was *bumfitt yain* and twenty *jiggit*.

So strangely does the speech of days immensely ancient cling to the tongue of a man who knows only English, and who, if questioned, would deny stoutly that he was speaking any other than the language heard all about him in the present day. I think it may have been in those forgotten times when all men among these hills spoke as the shepherd did beside the hurdles of his fold, that an old man came wandering down from the western hills, even as I came to-day, and stood weary and wanting shelter in these fields. It must have been nearly as long ago as I suggest; for there were only meadows where we see the town of Hawes, while on the hills which now stand bare and swept by every storm, there rose the towers and gateways of a noble city, populous and proud, drawing vast riches from the fertile valley. The old man toiled up the steep road to the gate of the town, never doubting that in the midst of so much wealth there would be many who recognized that kindness to poor travellers is the first as it is the simplest of all virtues. But the people of the city had forgotten to be simple, and had taken into their hearts the lust of riches, and despised the traveller who wandered wearily about the streets, meeting only scoffs from those who might have helped him, till he came to a wretched cottage where a man, scarcely less destitute than himself, took him in and sheltered him, and gave him what he could. So the next morning, when the first rosy light was breaking in the sky far down the vale, and the dust lay thick in the streets of the wicked city, the old traveller rose up, and standing high on the hillside, called out loudly:—

> "Simmer water rise, Simmer water sink,
> And swallow all the town,
> Save yon little house
> Where they gave me meat and drink."

And as he spoke there blew a great wind out of the mountains, and after it, heaped up and foaming wildly, came the floods, sapping and levelling first one tower, then another, and

washing over the ruin with resistless waves, till the last house crashed down into the conquering tide, and the whole of that great city lay beneath the water.

So it lies yet unto this hour; and when Simmer water on some still summer evening is unruffled by any breeze, there are those who say that beneath its glassy surface they can see the drowned houses and the minarets which used to gleam so brightly in the setting sun. I do not know what the truth may be. It is all so long ago; and I think the people who refused their hospitality must have been of another race than those who dwell in Wensleydale to-day. Or is it that they, too, might forget their sturdy welcome to the stranger did they but grow as rich as the men who built the city on the hill! Heaven keep them from the heaped up riches; and to go no further than the facts which are existing, I may remark that they are so little apt in Wensleydale to leave a stranger wandering alone, that to this day in Bainbridge, when the hills are darkening, and the traveller following the moorland tracks, fears to stray off the half-seen trodden way, and plunge in some morass, or lose himself among the waste of fern and heather, they blow a horn within the village, so that the hoarse blast floating up from the valley may guide the stranger into shelter and security.

Wensley.

CHAPTER XII

WENSLEYDALE

I DO not know why Wensleydale should be the only one among the Yorkshire dales which does not take its title from its river. Intrusive little Wensley, at the opening of the valley, hath eaten up the credit of the whole—a rank injustice which I will revenge on the vainglorious townlet by saying little of it in this my desultory chronicle. "He hath got possession of another man's house," said sturdy old Sir John Gayer, when King William, he of Holland, came and asked to see Stoke Poges Manor House, and Lady Gayer went on her knees before her lord to gain admission for the usurper waiting in his carriage at the gate. "He hath got possession of another man's house, and he shall not come into mine." So Dutch William knocked in vain, just as pretty Wensley shall sue fruitlessly for admission to my garden, where silver bells and cockle shells await those who have not stolen other people's credit.

I must give way, however, to this insolence of usurpation. I cannot speak of Jorvaulx as the monks did, or be the only man in England who will talk of Yoredale. Yet what is there which gives beauty to this wide open valley if it be not the river flashing over Aysgarth Falls, or stealing through the holms of Middleham? The hills and villages may be the blood and bones of Wensleydale, but the river is its soul; and as I turn my memory back on what I found there it is the river, always the river which leaps first into sight, the rush of

Askrigg.

its falling waters which makes all my quiet study musical, and the sweet clear light of early morning turning all the hillside above Aysgarth into "sovran gold."

Wise men rise betimes on a summer morning in Wensleydale, and there were still a few light mists in the hollow of the river as I came along the bare road which runs from Hawes by Buttersett to where Bainbridge lies under the great slopes of Addlebrough. It is a little town, not wholly destitute of charm; but it is not near the hour for horn blowing, and bow-

ever pleased I might feel to see the lights of Bainbridge after toiling along uncertain paths in twilight on the moor, the spot does not interest me much in this clear sunshine. I am more delighted in identifying Garland Hill, beyond the river, up which a kind old lady, long since dust, set many generations of mankind toiling frantically. For having in her walks abroad noticed that a part of the declivity was particularly steep, it struck her that it would be charmingly comic to see a number of young men panting up it for a prize. Doubtless the fancy served her for much solitary laughing while she lived, and on her deathbed she worked it out into a really very tolerable farce, bequeathing the rents of certain lands to provide a money prize once a year, and not only that but a garland also, with which the perspiring forehead of the victor should be decked. Dear maiden humourist! how often must the shades have echoed with imported merriment when the day came round, and all the lads in Askrigg, black with suppressed exertion, red and swollen with heat and loss of breath, went swarming up the fellside! But I grieve to say the Askrigg people have grudged her joke to the fanciful old lady, and no one races up the hillside now; nor are any garlands twined in the summer days at Askrigg. So the world grows sadder day by day, and soon there will be nothing to laugh at any more.

Well, Garland Hill has gone away behind me, and so have the battlements of Nappa Hall—that old house of the Metcalfes, concerning which I might say much were not my head buzzing with the memories of a far nobler family, for the first sight of whose great castle I am continually scanning the slopes of the northern hills. Let others tell the tale of good Sir Christopher Metcalfe and his cavalcade of three hundred of his own name and kin; and all the other legends they can rake together concerning this fine and interesting house. I never promised to leave no gleanings on the ground I travelled; and in point of fact I have scarce lost sight of Nappa when the river, still, as I said, the soul of Wensleydale, begins to break, and here and

Askrigg.

there a patch of foam gleams white upon its even surface, or a rippling current shot off from the summit of a sunken boulder swirls aside half across the waterway, while the whole stream, gathering swiftness, is ruffled by the chafing of some unseen impediment. So there floats up once more into the silent air of the hillside road that fine soft music of a rushing river, which has beguiled so many a mile of the long journey I have made in Yorkshire; and with every turn, as the road rises and the trees grow thicker, it besets me more; till, as I come at last to the cross roads by the inn at Aysgarth and go down through the churchyard, I pause in wonder whether my own fancy has not beguiled me, or whether it is indeed the quiet stream I saw at Hawes, which here occupies the whole valley with so hoarse a voice. A thick belt of trees hides the watercourse, and I hasten down through the dewy morning shadows, scarce heeding the cheerful piping of the thrushes sitting high up in the sunlight, or the dogroses, white and pink, glowing wet upon some hedge, till I come out beside a sunny mill at the foot of the descent, where a wagon and a team of horses stand waiting for despatch upon some early journey, and the jangling bells sound pleasantly as now one horse and now another shivers to toss away the flies.

Straight before me lies the high arch and parapet of Aysgarth Bridge, and as I step out upon it, eager to know what has happened to the river, my slow companion during many a mile, I stop bewildered. For the placid stream has gone, and in its place, surging out from a distant bend of trees, there pours down a rushing and tumultuous torrent, torn and broken and driven into eddies by a multitude of rocks, over which it foams and flashes with wreaths and flecks of white, which in the clear morning radiance are absolutely splendid. Far off up the stream, where the woods lie dark and wet on either bank, there is only a rare sparkle of the sun, still low behind me in the eastern sky; but the scattered water finds the light as it races down towards the bridge; and where it drops over a high ledge,

spreading out into a shallow film as it descends, the cascade is all golden, while the deeper pool below is bronze; and then the whole tortured river slips over another fall and scours away beneath the dark shadow of the bridge.

I do not know whether any acute and learned writer has ever discoursed on the essential and necessary qualities of a bridge. Of course I am not referring to those qualities which affect its stability, which are a matter of calculation and measurement, which appeal particularly to coarse fibred people, and which may, for aught I know, be expounded in a whole shelf of books which I should never dream of opening. One man's wisdom is not another's. Let us all be tolerant, and while I concede to modern bridge builders that it may be very right to make the structure strong and stable, fit to carry carts and steam-rollers and other necessary nuisances, I claim to be heard when I point out that it is even more needful that a man should be able to lean over it in comfort.

For who is the real blessing in a country place? Is it the squire, who is absent half the year, or his agent, who will let no poor man crib an inch of land; or the parson, who deals with the Stores, and preaches on the advantages of thrift? Not so; the real blessing is the idle man, he who lights his pipe and saunters out in the soft sunshine, and seeks a mossy parapet not quite breast high, on which he can spread his arms, and muse and watch the bubbles drifting, and the foamy water leaping, leaping up the buttresses; he who finds excitement in the troubles of some fisherman casting his line in a brown eddy higher up, his creel and landing net safe propped upon a jut of rock, or in the flight of the swallows skimming so low that they seem to dip their white bosoms in the fall, while the sun lights up their backs with every shade of royal blue, or yet more indolent, is content to watch the swift water coursing over the golden shallows, happy only to be alive where all nature is so musical, so animated, and so full of colour—till the hour comes for lunch, and he strolls up to the hotel, paying cheerfully for

his slice of salmon eight times the price of the London market.

Happy, cheerful idler, easy to please and easy to rob! Who but he brings blessing to a countryside, diffusing a healing dew of good temper and half-crowns! But what is there for him at Aysgarth, where the parapet of the bridge is so high that a man can but just rest his chin on it? I vow I turned away with a bitter heart; I have lost all the pretty musings which must have come to me in that exquisite spot had the bridge only been fit to lean on. Plague on the Aysgarth folk! Did they never see the proper model of a bridge . . . . a wide, low balustrade, stained with lichen, with trails of ivy and of wandering jew dropping down beneath the arches.? Why, at Tanfield, on this very river, there is one so easy, so sunny, and so full of pleasant murmurs from the rippling river. . . . but I really cannot stay to lecture further upon bridges, nor is it necessary, for if County Boards cannot act upon these pregnant hints, they would not heed me though I wrote a volume.

A golden morning is a solvent for ill-temper; and ere I had gone half-a-mile from this unlucky bridge, I had forgotten all about it. For I had left the road, and was threading my way across a piece of common land bordering the river, which was heard, not seen, because a lofty hedge of shrubs and elder trees cut off the view. The ground was dotted over with brambles and dogroses, and presently the path dropped a little, and went down by broken ground to a kind of staircase in the rock, whence I climbed out on a projecting reef round which the water surged noisily, and had before me such a scene as is not to be found elsewhere in England.

For the woods upon the further bank throw out a shoulder, stretching, as it seems from where I stand, half across the river's bed, so that the white torrent, narrowed to but half its width, pours over a ledge between two dark reefs, and as it falls finds instantly a second and a wider ledge, over which it spreads out in a sheet of dazzling whiteness and again it falls over a

third, far broader than the other two, expanding like a fan wrought by some cunning silversmith of intricate laced filagree, but leaping and quivering with infinity of wondrous palpitating lights and flashes all over its moving surface, and so rushes downwards over more stairs than I can count, sometimes curling over in a full round flood, sometimes broken and torn, and flying like sea-spray round a black jutting boulder, widening continually as if it tore out its full course again by sheer power and might of its descent, while the dark trees shut it in, and here and

Bolton Castle.

there a bare rock face shines warm in the increasing brightness of the sun.

Ah, exquisite Aysgarth! Who would not strive and strive again to reach some true expression of the fair picture which lies glowing in his memory! Words are but a palisade, through whose chinks one can, at most, catch some gleam of all that beauty, and while I sit and vainly steep my senses in the roar and turmoil of the flashing water, I know well that I might as easily describe a swallow's flight as the abounding loveliness of this great fall at Aysgarth.

Well, it is gone ; the rush and glory of the fall have passed into memory ; and I am following a field path scarce trodden out between high swathes of grass waiting for the scythe, while the sun, mounting ever as I loitered by the fall, burns and bronzes all the scorching valley. Full in front of me, scarce two miles distant, lie the dark towers of Bolton Castle, standing strong and grim half way up the green hillside, quivering a little in the shimmer of the heat, which gives them a certain glamour as if the blast of some enchantment might dissolve them suddenly, and send the whole gaunt stronghold flying piecemeal into that limbo of romance whither the Scropes who held it have retreated out of this workaday world, carrying with them their memories of border raids and outlaws of the Marches, of fugitive and murdered kings, and of captive queens, with all the rout of chivalry which followed them. Ah, how silent all the land is where pageants were so common once ! where the Friars Minors came barefoot across the hills from Richmond, with their stinging impulses to uphold the memory of poor King Richard, whom the Scropes loved, and their hints that in truth he did not die at Pontefract, but was alive, and would come again into the loyal north country,—where Mary Stuart rode a hunting with sidelong looks towards the kingdom which she would never see again—where the cannon of the Parliament roared for many a day, while Colonel Scrope ate horse flesh and defied his enemies ! How still it is now all the old hot life has gone ! The land is drowsing beneath the summer heat ; and in some tall tree of a little wood bordering on the farm below the castle, there sits a wood pigeon wiling the heart out of the body of any man who will stop to hear her.

There is one who will, having indeed much to think about in the shadow of the four great towers, still so strong and tall, which Richard, first Lord Scrope of Bolton, built in those days when the poor prisoner of Pontefract was still a powerful monarch. Scrope was his chancellor, an old man who had fought at Cressy six and thirty years before, a stout and faithful

counsellor, too sturdy and too true for the poor foolish king. For when certain greedy courtiers persuaded the king to grant them the rents of certain lands of deceased persons during the time for which, according to the custom of the realm, the king should hold them, Scrope refused to issue grants under the great seal, and sent the courtiers away empty-handed. So they went back to the king —the story is in Walsingham—and bade him mark how the chancellor had set his heart to make light the king's order, and that it became him to suppress such heady disobedience, else his kingly honour would be stained, and his orders would not weigh with any one. Now the king had no more than the wisdom of a peevish boy ; and, giving way to passion, he sent a messenger to Scrope with orders to take the great seal away, and bring it back to him. But the messenger returned empty-handed to the king ; and at last, when others with the same orders were despatched, the chancellor replied : "I am ready to resign the seal, not to you, but to him who gave it me to keep, and between him and me there shall be no intermediary, but I will give it back into his own hands." And so seeking out the king, he gave up the seal ; "and the king," adds Walsingham, "having got the seal in his own hands, did just what he liked for a long time."

It was in 1382, seventeen years before that fatal Irish expedition, during which Bolingbroke landed and seized the power of the country, that Richard used his faithful servant thus ; yet there was surely something which people loved in the peevish, tyrannous lad who came to regal power so young, and brought it to an end so wretched, else how could it have happened that the House of Scrope would cling so warmly to his cause, when it had no other guerdon than the block to offer? It is true that wise old Richard, the builder of this castle, carried over his prudent head and his great influence to the camp of Henry and the cause of good government ; but his eldest son, the Earl of Wiltshire, lost his life at Bristol by loyalty to the fallen king ; and the whole Scrope family

appear to have trusted the assurances that no harm should happen to the person of the rightful monarch. Satisfied with this, Archbishop Scrope consented to the deposition, and assisted at Henry's coronation, and might have been a loyal subject to the House of Lancaster, had Henry acted with any kind of faith towards his prisoner.

To this hour it is a mystery what became of Richard. Though the balance of evidence is with the theory that he was starved at Pontefract, yet this is not certain. No man can declare positively in these days what the truth was of the wild stories which the Franciscans, as I have said already, carried up and down the dales and over all the moors and mountains of the north, whipping up men's passions, calling on their pity and their loyalty to the son of the glorious Black Prince, appealing to their hatred of new things, their turbulence, and dwelling hard doubtless on the shame of serving before a throne which was planted on a corpse. Six years these hints and rumours ran to and fro about the country; and it would be strange indeed if one so acute as Henry had not seen the danger of letting all this gossip last. Yet he produced no evidence as to the mode of Richard's death; he took no steps to clear himself of the foul charge of having slain him, and year by year drifted by with a growing confidence in men's hearts that the Friars had spoken truth, till one day, in 1405, Archbishop Scrope preached a fiery sermon in York Minster, and set up his banner against the cause of a king whose honour was stained with perjury and murder.

That must have been a great and memorable scene when the Archbishop dared to stand up in the holy stool, and appeal to the excited populace that such deeds should not be wrought by them who governed in this realm of England. The Friars had won their point, though heaven knows what the object was with which they followed it. But the words once said no retreat was possible. Twenty thousand men in arms crowded to the Archbishop's banner, and had there been a prudent head

among them they might have struck some blow which would have shaken Henry's throne, and even won it back for the wandering outcast who called himself King Richard. Henry Percy brought his tenantry from Topcliffe and from Beverley —when did a Percy hold his hand from rebellion?—and there, too, was Thomas Mowbray, the Earl Marshal, and many another brave knight; and the whole host lay in the forest of Galtres, not far out of York. But they consented to treat with the king's army, and the end was that Scrope was persuaded to disband his men, and being then defenceless, was arrested and brought to Bishopsthorpe, where the king then was with Gascoigne, that noble Yorkshireman who has left for an inspiration to all ages the memory of a chief justice who had no fear of man, not even of the frown of kings.

For being ordered to sentence the captive Archbishop Gascoigne answered nobly: "Neither you, my lord, nor any of your subjects can legally, according to the law of the realm, sentence any Bishop to death." But Henry was not to be baulked of blood by legal scruples; and a king who had sat contentedly these six years under a well-grounded suspicion of murder was not likely to concern himself with forms. What followed I give in the words of the chronicle itself.

"The King immeditely ordered Sir William Fulthorpe, a knight and not a judge, to pronounce sentence on the Archbishop in the hall of the said Manor House. Fulthorpe accordingly sat in the judge's seat, and commanded Scrope to be brought before him; the Archbishop, standing bareheaded, heard the following sentence pronounced: 'We do adjudge thee, Richard, to death as a traitor to the King; and do, by the King's command, order thee to be beheaded.' To which the Archbishop replied, 'The just and true God knoweth that I never intended evil against the person of Henry IV., now King.' . . . And afterwards he said to those standing around him, 'Pray ye that the Almighty God may not avenge my death on the King or his,' which words he

often repeated, like St. Stephen, who prayed for them that stoned him. The same day he was placed on a horse worth forty shillings, without a saddle, for which he returned thanks, saying, 'No horse ever pleased me better than this.' He then sang the psalm, 'Exaudi,' riding with a halter, and habited in a blood coloured garment, with sleeves of the same; for they would not allow him to wear the lined vestment worn by bishops; and so, with a purple coloured hood hanging down his shoulders, he was led like a sheep to the slaughter, and opened not his mouth in anger, or to pronounce sentence of excommunication.

"Having arrived at the place of execution, he said, 'Almighty God, I offer to thee myself and the cause for which I suffer, and beg pardon and indulgence of thee for all sins by me committed or omitted.' He then laid his hood and gown on the ground, and observed to his executioner, Thomas Almar, 'Son, may God forgive thee my death, as I forgive thee; but I pray thee that thou wilt give me with thy sword five wounds in the neck, which I desire to bear for the love of my Lord Jesus Christ, who, being for us obedient unto his Father till death, bore five principal wounds,' and three times kissed him, then, kneeling, he prayed, saying, 'Into thy hands, most sweet Jesu, I commend my spirit,' with his hands joined and his eyes raised towards heaven. Then stretching out his neck, and folding his hands over his breast, the executioner at five strokes severed his head from his body."

Such was the death of the great Archbishop Scrope, a man as dangerous to Henry after his death as when he lived. For the love the Yorkshire people bore both to his house and him was too strong to perish quickly, and, indeed, those were days in which faith stretched easily across the grave. So Scrope's spirit lived and wrought among the people; and as they knew him to be holy during life, so he continued his protection after death, and miracles were whispered of him, much to the anger of the government. When he had been dead eight years, the

new King, Henry V., endeared as he was to all the nation by his gallantry and fortune, found it necessary to prohibit offerings at the shrine of Scrope, who had then just wrought a notable miracle by arresting the fire in a belfry in York. The King stopped the outward show ; but not even he who won at Agincourt could destroy the inward reverence, or check the sprouting of the seed which was ere long to bear such bitter fruit for his own son. It was not given to him by fate to win the whole nation back to entire love and trust in the house of Lancaster. Had his short and splendid reign lasted but ten years more . . . But all this is childish speculation. In the book of fate it was written that England should be torn by the bloodiest of civil wars, and there was no part for any man to play but that of onlooker, while the passions deepened and the hatred of one house against another widened day by day.

I did not mean to say so much when I stopped and rested in this little wood. The wood-pigeon has done cooing. What has she to do with battles and with executions? Yet just such a cooing may have sounded in this wood on that June day when the messengers spurred up with the news of the Archbishop's death. Come, let us go up and see the castle. It lies facing the wide dale very gaunt and strong. On the south front there is no entrance ; and that upon the west, which passes for the main gateway, is scarcely more imposing than a postern. It gives access to a deep, vaulted chamber like a guard-room, and a series of winding staircases and dark apartments, which have to this hour a certain aspect suggestive of a prison. Even the light spirit of Mary Stuart, used as she was to live in grim old fortresses, must surely have been troubled when Scrope, the Warden of the Western Marches, to whom she had surrendered at Carlisle, brought her hither by the Queen's directions in the early autumn of 1568, listening courteously to her professions of eagerness to clear herself of the charge of complicity in that black tragedy of the Kirk o'

Field, by which her husband, sleeping securely, was blown up by gunpowder on a February night.

God forbid that I should touch the problem of Mary's guilt or attempt to reach the heart of that great drama of the casket letters which the Lords, her enemies, produced at York during the period of her stay at Bolton. What have I to do with questions of innocence or judgment? Let historians don the ermine and give their opinion from the judgment seat. Mary Stuart is not arraigned before my bar: and I thank heaven that it is so. For, in truth, when I look down even from my own exalted moral pinnacle, on that poor, friendless, sinful woman, lost in the abysses, I have no inclination to measure the very depth of her descent, or to know how far in any crisis she only stumbled, and how far she actually fell. How many storms of passion a man must have conquered before he dares to judge her! How far he must have risen over his own humanity before he can do aught but pity her, and that without contempt, but with a warm feeling of common nature which, but for the grace of God—as some one said—might have made his name, too, a byword and a hissing unto half the world, without at the same time winning, as Mary did, the perpetual love and trust of the other half.

The room which was the Queen's chief abode while she remained at Bolton is still shown, a large, gloomy chamber, looking to the west by a window so small as gives some colour to the story that she may have escaped by it. Here she sat and waited during all the autumn days when the authenticity of the casket letters was being discussed, and while the northern Lords were slowly moving forward to that insurrection of which I spoke at Barnard Castle, and concerning which I shall have more to say at Ripon. There is a scene told by poor Christopher Norton in his confession written not long before he suffered the penalties of high treason, which is worth quoting here; for Christopher was in attendance upon Mary, and may have been the channel of frequent messages passing between

her and those Lords of the old religion who saw in her the hope of the faith which they supported. "One day," said Norton, "when the Queen of Scots in winter had been sitting at the window side knitting of a work; and after the board was covered, she rose and went to the fireside; and, making haste to have the work finished, would not lay it away, but worked of it the time she was warming herself. She looked for one of her servants, which, indeed, were all gone to fetch up her meat, and seeing none of her own folk there, called me

Bolton Castle.

to hold her work, who was looking at my Lord Scrope and Sir Francis Knollys playing of chess. I went, thinking I had deserved no blame, and that it should not have become me to have refused to do it, my Lady Scrope standing there, and many gentlemen in the chamber that saw she spoke not to me. I think Sir Francis saw not nor heard when she called of me. But when he had played his mate, he, seeing me standing by the Queen holding of her work, called my captain to him, and asked him if I watched. He answered 'Sometimes.' Then he

gave the commandment that I should watch no more, and said the Queen would make me a fool."

Ah, Christopher! Unlucky, faithful Christopher! It sounds an innocent story told so to the Council in full view of the scaffold. What could a poor lad do when the Queen called him? She spoke not to him. But did ever any man stand before Mary Stuart in the silence and the warm gloom and feel no thrill of love for her? Was it not the flight of some warm human message which Sir Francis Knollys detected, some soft appeal from the liquid eyes, some glance beseeching his devotion. . . . Pooh, what is it that occurs when a raw lad is called to stand beside a captive Queen, and she the loveliest and most unfortunate woman on the earth?'

Christopher Norton was to watch no more. But history records that through his agency there was indeed an effort to escape—a subtle plot in which Lady Livingston was to play the moonstruck damsel consumed with passion to meet Christopher by night outside the moat. What more natural than for the lovebird to pass out with her face close veiled? And who would then know whether it were she or one who had far greater reasons for desiring to pass the guard? It was a pretty plot, but some link in the chain dropped out, and the drama ran to its appointed end. There is a tradition told up and down the dale that the Queen did once actually escape by the window of her chamber, and finding horses and attendants waiting on the hill rode off as far as the ridge by Leyburn, which is called "The Shawl," where she was overtaken by Scrope's horsemen and brought back. The spot is shown where she was stopped. The story may be true. Yet what folly to have skirted along the hillside, within sight and hearing of farms and manors, when she might have struck at once over the wild moors! How small a thing might have changed the history of England and of Scotland at that time! Had the Queen escaped, and ridden at the head of the rising of the north, the whole inquiry into her guilt, all the discussions at

York about the casket letters, must have been dropped hastily. Or had Lord Westmorland, who waited on the moors to intercept the Scotch lords carrying the casket, managed to seize and to destroy it! But it was fated otherwise. True or false, the casket letters ruined Mary; her supporters perished on the scaffold; and when she left Bolton it was but to plunge further into that Protestant England in which, after twenty years of hopes and disappointments, the whole drama ended by the axe in the courtyard of Fotheringay.

This old tragedy comes very close as I roam about the corridors where Ross and Herries and the faithful Maitland used to wait for audience of Mary. But as I climb on up the winding stair, past halls and state apartments dropping to decay, and so come out upon the battlements, whence I can look down on the whole waste and ruined shell of grandeur —towers, which by the dropping of their floors, are mere tall shafts; doorways, which for ages have given passage only to the birds,—when I reach this point, and all the vast extent of the ancient castle lies before me, with the green hills rising rough and broken on the one hand, and on the other the river winding sweetly up the long dale, there come back upon my memory all those border exploits which are credited to the lords who were so often wardens of the western marches. "Keen Lord Scrope's to the hunting gone," and noble hunting he must have had among the border reivers, the most lusty and audacious thieves of which English history has knowledge.

> "Of Liddisdail the commoun thiefis,
> Sa pertlie steilis now and reifis,
> That nane may keep hors, nolt, nor scheip,
> Nor yet dare sleip for their mischiefs."

Such were the bad men whom it was the duty of many Lords Scrope to watch up to the limit of the English border; and though the whole delightful subject lies outside my

domain, yet as the Scropes fall within it, I may be forgiven for telling one story of their stewardship.

> "O have ye na hearde o' the fause Sakelde,
> O have ye na hearde o' the keen Lord Scrope?
> How they have ta'en bauld Kinmont Willie,
> On Haribee to hang him up?"

I fear there are many of us poor Southrons who have heard of neither one nor the other. Kinmont Willie was one of the worst of thieves, and by consequence one of the most loved and respected of mankind in the acquisitive society where Providence had placed him. Salkeld was, I fear, a man of no delicacy of feeling. For there really was a truce, and he did actually break it by securing this bad thief when he met him on the mountain side, and what is more he refused to give him up, truce or no truce, without the orders of Lord Scrope, who was not then at Carlisle, but probably at Bolton, and who on his part felt that such a rascal as Kinmont Willie must at any rate be kept until the Queen and Council decided whether to hang him or to let him go.

It was all very natural and human -but how imprudent! For if you catch a thief, and are not inclined to do the gracious thing at once, how much better to hang him instantly, and tell the Queen and Council afterwards! Scrope ought not to have needed prompting on this score. The duties of a Warden of the Marches might well have taught him greater readiness, while the constant proximity of the Scots should have convinced him that when they fail in their ends it is not for want of trying lustily. However, that is what he did; and Kinmont Willie lay in Carlisle Castle, where it might have been thought he was safe enough.

But thirty Scotsmen resolved to have him out. Buccleuch himself was at the bottom of it. Dear heavens, does one never pine among the modern comforts of Dalkeith for the days in which half the spearmen of the Border were in saddle at the

signal of Buccleuch! "And for such purpose the Lord of Buccleuch, upon intelligence that the Castle of Carleill, where the prisoner was keept, was surpriseable, and of the meanes, by sending some persons of trust to view a postern gate, and to measure the height of the wall very closely, he did immediately draw togither 200 horse, assured the place of meeting ane hour before sunset at the Toure of Mortoune, the which is ten miles from Carleill, and upon the water of Sark in the debateable land, quhair he had preparation of ledders for scaleing the castle wall. . . " Pooh, the story needs the lilt of verse, and the ballad has ten times the spirit of the history:—

"He has call'd him forty marchmen bauld,
Were kinsmen to the bauld Buccleuch;
With spur on heel and splent on spauld
And gleuves of green and feathers blue.

There were five and five before them a'
Wi' hunting horns and bugles bright;
And five and five came wi' Buccleuch,
Like Warden's men, arrayed for fight.

And five and five, like a mason gang,
That carried the ladders alang and hie;
And five and five, like broken men;
And so they reached the woodhouselee.

And when we reached the Staneshaw bank,
The wind was rising loud and hie;
And there the laird garr'd leave our steeds,
For fear that they should stamp and nie.

And when we left the Staneshaw bank,
The wind began full loud to blaw;
But 'twas wind and weet, and fire and sleet,
When we came beneath the castle wa'.

We crept on knees and held our breath,
Till we placed the ladders against the wa',
And sae ready was Buccleuch himsell
To mount the first before us a'.

He has ta'en the watchman by the throat,
He flung him down upon the lead—
"Had there not been peace between our lands,
Upon the other side thou hadst gaed;

"Now sound out trumpets!" quo' Buccleuch;
Let's waken Lord Scrope right merrilie!"
Then loud the warden's trumpet blew—
"Oh, wha dare meddle wi' me!"

Then speedilie to wark we gaed
And raised the Slogan ane and a';
And cut a hole through a sheet of lead,
And so we wan to the castle ha'.

They thought King James wi' a' his men
Had won the house wi' bow and spear;
It was but twenty Scots and ten,
That put a thousand in sic a stear!

And when we cam to the lower prison,
Where Willie of Kinmont he did lie—
"Oh, sleep ye, wake ye, Kinmont Willie,
Upon the morn that thou's to die?"

Then Red Rowan has heute him up,
The starkest man in Tiviotdale—
"Abide, abide now, Red Rowan,
Till of my Lord Scrope I take farewell."

"Farewell, farewell, my gude Lord Scrope!
My gude Lord Scrope, farewell!" he cried—
"I'll pay you for my lodging maill,
When first we meet on the border side."

We scarce had won the Staneshaw bank,
When a' the Carlisle bells were rung,
And a thousand men on horse and foot,
Cam wi' the keen Lord Scrope along.

Buccleuch has turned to Eden water,
Even where it flowed frae bank to brim,
And he has plunged in wi' a' his band,
And safely swam them through the stream.

He turned him on the other side,
And at Lord Scrope his glove flung he—
"If ye like na my visit in merrie England,
In fair Scotland come visit me!"

Oho, keen Lord Scrope! I wonder how long it was before the pages at Bolton and Carlisle ceased to go about laughing secretly when they heard the name of Kinmont Willie! and what a tale to tell the Council, who at that moment were deciding whether Willie should be hung or not! But what a noble, lusty, fullblooded life it was! and who that knows the tale will ever pass Carlisle Castle without hearing the stir and the hubbub and Buccleuch's bugle ringing out defiantly the old slogan, "Oh, Wha Dare Meddle wi' Me!":—

Yet or I dee
Sum sall thame see,
Hing on a tree
Quhill thay be deid!
Quo' Sir R. M. of Lethington, Knight."

And if Scrope was acquainted with these spiteful and ill-tempered verses, he doubtless found much comfort in them. But this really will not do. Here I am right out of Yorkshire, and not for the first time! Yet this excursion into Westmorland has refreshed me, as a schoolboy is revived by a détour into his neighbour's orchard; and I am full of energy as I descend again into the heat, and run on past the little church, as old as the days of Richard the Second, and through the village, and so past pretty Wensley, which has such a charming bridge and such a lofty notion of its own importance. For it claims to have given England one Queen, one Prince of Wales, one cardinal-archbishop, three other archbishops, five bishops, three chancellors, two chief justices of England, and more earls, barons, knights, and abbots than it cares to count. So Wensley goes peacocking about among the other Yorkshire villages on the strength of all these ancient glories, and every urchin holds his head the higher and dreams of cardinals.

It is time to get me gone from Wensleydale, though I have

not said one-half of the things I meant to say when I came down the hill on Hardraw, and first saw the long, still stretches of the Ure. The afternoon is waxing late, and my wheels have brought me into Leyburn, that wide, dull, formless town which stands so notably just where the high ridges that wall the dale begin to drop and die away in the vast central plain of Yorkshire, while if any reason were needed for dispatch upon the journey thither, it is furnished me by certain heavy drops of rain that splash at quick intervals out of an overclouding sky, and the rise of a little sobbing wind, which presages a thunderstorm.

Wensleydale.

Indeed, I had scarce reached the shelter of the "Bolton Arms" when the whole wide dale was filled with driving showers, while the thunder rattled heavily around the hills, and sharp, stabbing snaps of lightning flashed suddenly out of the towering clouds which built themselves up in huge, black battlements above the moors. So all the afternoon I watched the storm sweeping in a great procession through the dale; but towards evening the rain abated, and I set out on foot to see the moors which lie above the Scropes' great castle. Even when the heavens ceased to weep, the clouds lay low and heavy on the hill crests, and

the wide mouth of Wensleydale was filled with grey mists, through which even Middleham, which lies but two miles off across the valley, could be discerned with difficulty. The sky was torn and angry, and presently great thunderclouds blew up again from the south-west, and stood in lurid ranks above the sulphurous hills. Then the lashing rain came down once more in torrents; the grassy track across the moor swam with water; there was neither man nor animal to be seen upon the lonely waste which lay strewn with scattered ling and gorse, and here and there a standing pool of bog water, extending further than the eye could range across the undulations of the hills. So the storm lasted until dusk. But then a small red spot came and sat upon the summit of one of the inky hills, sole in the waste of angry sky, and by and bye it spread its wings like a crimson bird, and then it was a bar of flame, and then a river of orange and copper flowing all along the ridge, and next a wide gap of gold and crimson in the torn sky, piercing the mists with shafts of radiant light. And then the sun sank, and the crimson paled, and the hilltops swam in a sea of watery green and opal.

Wensleydale.

CHAPTER XIII

LEYBURN, MIDDLEHAM, COVERHAM, JERVAUX, AND HACKFALL

Long and long ago one Christopher Brown fled from this town of Leyburn to the sanctuary of St. Cuthbert at Durham. It was on Saturday, 26th July of the year 1477, that Brown came begging with anguish—"Peciit cum instancia"—the safety and the freedom of the saint; and in the nave of the great cathedral, in presence of a notary and witnesses, he loosed his heart from the load it bore, and told the reason of his terror. In the brief Latin jotting which the monks made, it is but half a story, and it went back no less than eighteen years to a certain day in 1459. It was the Feast of St. Wilfrid, October 12th, and Brown, upon a certain road near Laburn—"apud Laburn juxta Midilham in Coverdale,"—note which were the well-known places in those days—met one Thomas Carter riding with his little son held before him on the horse. There was some cause of quarrel between the men, and as Carter went by, Brown let fly a biting jibe at him, which stung him so that he leapt down from his horse, forgetting the child, and ran to revenge himself on his insulter. But the little lad, left without support, slipped off the horse, and the beast, startled by the suddenness of the movements, reared and plunged, and his hoofs crashed down upon the child, and gave him hurts of which he died.

I do not know with what eyes the two men saw each other, when Carter snatched his little son out from the cruel hoofs of

the frightened horse and both stood looking down on the deed they had done. It is a pitiful tragedy, yet, doubtless, not unexampled. But what makes the matter more worth notice is the singular fact that eighteen years passed before Brown's fears, or his awakening conscience, drove him to flee across the moors to sanctuary. I do not know that the one man was more to blame than was the other. But did remorse slumber eighteen years before affecting either of them? Less than such an injury has often in the history of Yorkshire started a blood feud, and a bitter passion for slaying which has lasted out two generations. Was there such a feud between the Carters and the Browns; or was it merely that the furies, the avengers of blood, were in pursuit of Brown from the very moment of his deed, till at last after eighteen years they drove him a shattered, miserable man into the home of peace upon the Wear?

Something there was, beyond a doubt, which dogged Brown all that time; and if it was impalpable, his terror may have been the greater. Four hundred years have not swept Wensleydale of superstition. "Some years back," says a writer in *Folklore of the Northern Counties*, "a man told me he had met Mr. —— walking on the road; 'but,' he added, 'it was nobbut but his shadow, and I don't think he'll live long." A dozen tales of this sort go chasing each other through my brain as I go down the long, steep hill which passes out of Leyburn towards the river It is a ghostly country, and those who know best the life and beliefs of the people see in them a kind of magic clue which, if it be set going, will unroll itself into far distant days, and guide him who elects to follow it past all history of Tudor, Plantagenet, or Norman, past Saxon and past Dane, to an age where there are no landmarks in the mist of time, nor any certain voices perceptible to modern ears. Straight and unbroken out of the homes of long-forgotten races come those creeds and fancies which are cherished in the cottages of the labouring folk to-day, paganism out of distant lands growing still in our midst, as it was cherished by those

who roamed the ocean in their dragon keels, and traced these fancies from ancestors so remote that they themselves had neither memory nor record of their origin. Dear heaven! How infinite is the long procession of the ages; and how blind are we who march in it, seeing neither the ranks which march in front, nor those which follow, but have eyes only for ourselves, stalking proudly across the fields and uplands as if they were our own, and we denied the title of the dead.

The long hill has brought me down at last to a bridge of iron cast across the river. On either side there are wide water

Middleham Castle.

meadows, through which the children will tell you with hushed voices, that Water Kelpie romps, on the watch perpetually for stray children, many of whom she has carried off to the slimy depths of Ure. It may be so, though I have passed this way by noon and nightfall and yet have not seen her, nor do I wish it, for in my heart . . . but that is my own affair. Besides I really have not time to stay beside this stream dilating upon demons. Up above me on the hill, half hidden by the houses over which it used to tower, stands the great castle of Fitzranulph, whose banner hung, among others, in the Hall of Scolland

within Richmond Castle. This was one of the greatest of the tributary strongholds which gave support to the semi-royal state of Richmond. But Fitzranulph is gone and long forgotten ; the children will tell you that this was the castle of the Nevilles, for in Yorkshire the fame of that great family has by no means passed away from whose loins there sprang the Earls of Westmorland, Salisbury and Warwick, the Marquisate of Montacute, a Duke of Bedford, the Barons Furnival, Latimer, Fauconbridge, and Abergavenny ; and whose main line died away at last in poverty and sorrow at Sheriff Hutton Castle, whither, after the fall of the great kingmaker at Barnet, his heir retired stripped of both property and titles, and died scarce better off than any shepherd on the wolds.

But the Nevilles were in the centre of their power when they dwelt at Middleham, and of all their castles there was none save Raby where they dwelt with more magnificence than here. I do not know what truth there may be in the suggestion thrown out long since by wiser heads than mine, that the exasperating "he" who in the old ballad of "The Nutbrown Mayd" so tortured and tormented the loving heart which was far too faithful for a husband so suspicious, and who avowed himself at last to be "an earlys son" entitled to the heritage of Westmorland, might not be a member of this great family. If so, I hope his conduct was not typical of the family demeanour to the trusty woman hearts which followed them. I climb up through the little town, past the market place, and through a narrow side street on the left, where the houses stand so close beneath the old main gateway as to preclude the possibility of seeing the grim structure at any distance. It is grand and gloomy rather than picturesque. The old Norman keep of the Fitzranulphs is still more conspicuous than the later buildings grouped around it. Strong and dark, its projecting towers and turrets at the angles stand to this day in firm clear outline, while the more splendid chambers where the luxury of the Nevilles and the splendour of a Royal Court displayed themselves, stand

ruined and deserted, a waste of blackened crumbling walls and roofless chambers, of masonry dropping on the greensward, and wallflowers blooming sweetly round the mouldings of the gateways.

I suppose it is mere fancy which sees in any mighty ruin an aspect according with the spirit of the deeds which have been done there. Stone is stone, and mortar mortar, all the world over; yet where is there a man who can so detach his mind from the impression of past events as to look upon the stone and mortar of Pontefract or Middleham without some thrill of passion which he never felt before a mountain precipice, however lofty? For my part I cannot pass by Middleham without a shudder; for over all the knightly and the noble recollections of the Nevilles there broods the most terrible of all figures in our English history, the shade of Richard, Duke of Gloucester, a man in many ways so wise and strong, so clear-sighted and so brave in action that in him villainy was seen surely at its best, and it may be counted most exactly what harvest can be reaped by a man whose heart has rejected pity, what riches can be garnered by one who compasses his ends with secret murder.

I came hither intending to write about the Nevilles; but I cannot see past this terrible figure of King Richard the Third, who gained this heritage by a marriage with Anne Neville, second daughter and co-heiress of the great earl who fell at Barnet. If on that unhappy day the kingmaker had been able to anticipate the turn of fate, he might have used the bitter words which poor King James uttered of the Crown of Scotland, when they brought him news that a daughter had been born to him. "It came with a lass and it'll go with a lass." It was from the heiress of the Fitzranulphs that the Nevilles got this lordly castle. But it should not have gone with a lass so soon by many a year; for Warwick's Countess was alive, and partly by life interest, and partly through her own right the estates were hers. Yet the Duke of Clarence, who in Warwick's

lifetime, married the elder daughter, held the lands; while as for Lady Anne, who was entitled to the half of them after her mother, he hid her secretly from the pursuit of Richard.

He might as well had hid her from a sleuthhound which had smelt her glove. Richard found her in the habit of a kitchen maid. He was a strangely chosen wooer. He had stabbed her lover in cold blood upon the field of Tewkesbury; he had murdered that lover's father, poor King Henry, at midnight in the Tower with his own hands—so, at least, men still believed—and if it was not his hand that struck both blows, he was at least present when both murders were committed. It is folly to read of old events in the light of contemporary judgments. In those days blood was in the air; men who had shed much were yet not loathed by noble ladies, and it may be that Richard, who was young in crime, did not displease the poor girl who saw no escape from him. So they were wed; and ere long Clarence was slain secretly in prison, men said again by Richard's hand; and an added portion of inheritance of the Nevilles passed to the Lord of Middleham. So did the stewardry of the Duchy of Lancaster, which gave him Pontefract, and the wardenship of the Western Marshes, which put him in command of Carlisle; and while using this vast power in Yorkshire, which he loved, Richard was always at his best reducing the Border to discipline, winning back Berwick from the Scots, so that the Yorkshiremen whom he led to triumph over their hated enemies, gave him their hearts, and for a space of years the power even of this man rested on attachment enough to make him happy.

This is why, of all places in the country, his name should be recalled at Middleham, where some good odour clings to him, where his son was born, where he suffered the agony of losing him, and where, beyond a doubt, he plotted the appalling treachery by which he grasped the throne. He was in Yorkshire when King Edward died; and what thoughts rose in his heart when he saw two weakly boys stand between him and the

Crown may be guessed by any one who counts his murders There is nothing told in English history more tragic than the tale of the crafty toils which Richard used to snare the two poor lads. When he had them safe within the Tower, and he himself sat on the throne, he paused a while—so great a murder as he dreamt of then needed time to collect his courage. The hour struck. The messenger sent to the Governor of the Tower found that foolish fellow troubled with stupid scruples; whereupon Richard sent back his familiar, Sir James Tyrrel, with written orders to take over all the keys of the Tower for one night. It was enough. The two lads were never seen again.

Poor, friendless children! They were fearfully avenged. "I have heard by credible report," said Sir Thomas More, "of such as were secret with his chamberers, that after this abominable deed done he never had quiet in his mind, he never thought himself sure. Where he went abroad, his eyes whirled about, his bodily privily fenced, his hand ever on his dagger, his countenance and manner like one always ready to strike again. He took ill rest at night, lay long waking and musing; sore wearied with care and watch, he rather slumbered than slept. Troubled with fearful dreams, suddenly sometimes started he up, leapt out of his bed and ran about the chamber. So was his restless heart continually tossed and tumbled with the tedious impression and stormy remembrance of his most abominable deed."

Well, these are old tales now, and I daresay some may be impatient of them. As I came down the hill from Leyburn, I let fall an observation on the singularity of the indications given by the monks of Durham of the locality of that now flourishing tourist centre. Leyburn was "Juxta Midilham in Coverdale"—an odd description to our ears—for a traveller of to-day would be more likely to describe Middleham as near Leyburn, and would not know Coverdale at all, unless he were a Yorkshireman. I have given reasons for the fame of

Middleham ; and now it will be well to walk across the moor behind the Castle and find out how it happened that Coverdale was so well known at Durham in past ages and so little in our own.

I venture to hope that nobody will interrupt me at this point by talking of racehorses. I think no man alive can pause to rest in Middleham or try to gather any information about that once famous town without wondering whether, indeed, he was born to write a sporting calendar or a guide to the turf. You will ask the fellow who shows the Castle some question about "The Peacock of the North," and the odds are he will answer by inquiring what year he ran in, and volunteering the information that "Flying Dutchman," who won both the Derby and the St. Leger, was trained upon the top moor, under the shadow of Penhill ; while if you demand to be shown the Nevilles' Hall, he will offer to point out the training establishments of Mr. Fred Bates or the brothers Osborne, and, perhaps, even to put you in the way, for a trifling consideration, of some certain knowledge which will make you rich for life. You may listen to him if you like. But then you must put knights and monks out of your head. You cannot be both baronial and a modern sportsman. Some day I will go to Middleham with "Ruff's Guide" in my pocket and the *Pink 'Un* in my hand. I will sit down upon the moor and write my own and other people's sporting reminiscences. But till that time of leisure comes, I beg that I may not be troubled by further allusions to the subject.

Yet I know that, human nature being in all ages just what it is to-day, the monks were sportsmen too, and used these noble moors much in the same way as the brothers Osborne do. They were also notable sweet singers, as they well might be in a spot so pretty, where to this day the thrushes and the linnets pipe with such soft and liquid trillings as might teach any man to warble who would but listen to them. The road, after running for a little distance over the moor, breaks away from

the short turf and the outcropping rock, and falls between sweet hedges into a wooded valley, a sheltered cleft among the crowding of great hills, whose gaunt flanks and shoulders tower over the dale so high that one feels some wonder to see it all so bright and sunny. For there is not a tree nor bush which is not trembling in the gold light and the wandering wind which carries it. All the hollow is aglow, and from some depth of the valley bottom there rises up the sound of a river rushing freshly, just heard above the murmurs of the leaves and branches. I pause a moment on the hillside, half doubting whether I may not break some spell by stepping down among these sights and noises ; and, indeed, I wish with all my heart that I had turned away from the brow of the hill, and searched no further in the valley. There was once a monk—everybody knows the story—who walked out into the forest, a stone's throw from his monastery, and heard a blue bird singing as if his whole heart hung on every note. No thrush or blackbird ever piped with half such sweetness. The soul of the monk went out to the beautiful blue bird, and he followed it fluttering from tree to tree, singing the while as if all the love and bitterness in the world lay in his throat—followed in a trance of ecstasy, till he forgot his cell and his holy duties and his brother monks, and had ears only for the fluting of the bird. So at last he lost it ; but when he sought his monastery again he found it half in ruins and all its glory gone, and of himself no memory left save an old tradition that once upon a time—who knew how many years before?—a monk had strayed away into the forest and had been lost for ever in its glades. And it was for this that the poor monk came back to the reality of things ! Had he but been able to follow the blue bird !

Surely it was the piping of the blue bird which sounded in my ears as I paused upon the hillside, luring me away from the things I had come to see. I did not heed it, but went down through silent, dewy hedges till at last I reached a gateway, inside which a prosperous and comely farm reared its houseplace

and its byres for cattle. That is innocent, though unromantic; but in the next moment I saw the broken arches of Coverham Abbey towering over the barns; I traced out the line of the once noble church; I saw what occupied its aisles; I located the position of its high altar. . . And I turned away ashamed that men should not only dwell themselves and keep animals in the sacred precincts of a church, but even proclaim the fact to all the world by leaving the remnant of the arches standing still! It is not a sight to increase one's respect for modern life. Ah,

Coverham Abbey.

had I but followed the blue bird, and not gone down into the valley!

If that ground, which is not only consecrated but is also rich in the dust of saints and nobles, appears to any man a fitting place to stable cows and rattle milk pails in, one can but shrug one's shoulders and go one's way. So I went mine across the bridge which spans the stream, and on the further side I found a steep narrow lane, which led me up among trails of bramble and wild roses and along the slope of the hill till I came out at

last upon the village green of East Witton, a pretty village lying under the great fells that wall in Wensleydale on the south-eastern side. There is nothing much to see in Witton; and I went on by a pleasant road for something like two miles till the road turned up the hill, and almost at the corner a gateway standing open admitted me to the grounds in which lie the ancient ruins of Jervaux.

Had not my head been full of Bolton Castle as I came down Wensleydale, I should certainly have stopped near Bainbridge to see the site on which the monks who afterwards built Jervaux found their first home. In that bleak country they met with sore privations; and it is told of them that travelling on a certain time from Byland, to which more ancient monastery they were at first affiliated, they found themselves entangled and lost among the convolutions of the hills. Now the night before, the abbot had dreamt that he was visited in sleep by a Virgin and her child, and that the babe plucked a branch from some flowering tree which stood in the centre of the cloister court. And therefore believing himself under the protection of these sacred beings, he exclaimed, "Since we are thus impeded, let us repeat our hours and the Gospel." Immediately the same virgin and her child appeared, and the abbot cried out loudly, "Fair and tender woman, what doest thou with thy son in this rugged and desert place?" And the woman answered, "I am a frequent inmate of desert places, but now I have come from Rievaulx and Byland and am going to the new monastery." Then said the abbot, "Good lady, I implore thee to conduct me and my brethren out of this desert place, and lead us to the new monastery, for we are of Byland." She replied, "Ye were late of Byland, but now of Jorvaulx;" then she said, "Sweet son, be their leader; I am called elsewhere," and disappeared. The boy holding in his hand the branch plucked from the cloister at Byland cried aloud, "Follow me." At length they arrived at a barren and uncultivated place, where the boy planted the bough, which was instantly filled with white

birds, and having exclaimed, "Here shall God be adored for a short space," he disappeared also.

There is a certain lack of practical sagacity about this pretty story, which is characteristic of monkish chronicles; for it does not seem that the poor monks were much benefited by the services of a guide, who did but lead them from one wilderness to another. However, we are told that they did reach home not much after the child had left them; and, at any rate, it is quite natural that this incident should leave upon their

Jervaulx Abbey

minds the impression that they were in some special degree under heavenly protection. Perhaps it was so; for whereas their rugged pastures in the high dale would grow but little corn, they obtained no great while later the rich meadows under Witton Fell, among which I am now standing; and there they built one of the very noblest of all English churches, as may be seen still from the fragments which are left us after the ravages of past generations.

Not much is known of all the deeds and actions of the monks

at Jervaux; nor even if the story were recoverable would this be the place to tell it. But one vivid scene which happened is well worth transcribing, if only because it brings us to the earlier days of that great insurrection which is called the Pilgrimage of Grace, shows us the gathering of the host which we saw dispersed at Doncaster, and places before us the life of the monasteries in the very last hours of their long and splendid life.

In those years which came immediately before the Dissolution, Adam Sedbergh was abbot of Jervaux. I do not know whether he was in truth a man of peace, or whether it was merely policy which made him desire to keep aloof from the bands of angry peasants who began to rove the country in protest against the interference with monastic houses. He may have hoped that Jervaux might escape, if only it were not touched by any share in the disorders. However this may have been, the poor man had but little choice, for "on a Wednesday about Michaelmas Day, 1536, there came to the garth or court of the abbey of Jervaux, two or three hundred of the inhabitants of Mashamshire and Kirbyshire, and among them the Captains Middleton and Staveley. When he heard that they were there, he conveyed himself by a back door to Witton Fell, having with him another person or more, and a boy named Martin Gibson, bidding his other servants get them every man to his house and save his goods and cattle. He remained on the fell for the space of four days, returning to the monastery every night. During this time the commons wandered about the surrounding country and went to Coverham Abbey, then to Wensleydale and thence to Richmond. At length, having heard that he, the abbot, had said, 'That no servant of his should ever do him service, nor tenant dwell of no land of his, that should go with them,' they turned back to Jervaux and enquired for him. They were answered that he was absent. Then said they, 'We charge you, the brethren, to choose a new abbot.'" Upon this the brethren rang the chapter bell and went

towards making a new election, though certain among them said they would in no wise aid to make a new abbot. Half an hour's respite was then given to the monks, with the threat that if they continued to refuse, the house would be burnt over their heads.

If ever any men had cause to pray that they might be delivered from their friends, it was surely these unfortunate monks of Jervaux, and their still more luckless abbot. Terrified by the threats of the mob, which surged through the church and all the abbey buildings, offering each moment to carry out their threat, the monks sent messengers in all directions over the hill to seek the abbot; and at last one William Nelson found him by a great crag upon the summit, and told him of the strait in which the abbey stood, and how nothing would pacify the mob except his presence.

I doubt that Abbot Sedbergh, as he listened to the breathless tale, and looked down from his safe hiding on the fell to where the tower of his abbey stood in the lovely valley, saw any ending of this matter but the gibbet for himself, and destruction for that fair and goodly building. He held back and hesitated; till the man who found him pointed to a column of black smoke which rose up heavily among the trees, and showed him that the threats had been fulfilled, that the abbey was indeed on fire, and that if he would save any part of the structure, for which it was his duty to lay down his life, he must go down into that angry throng and do the best he could. So urged, the abbot hurried down the hillside; but when he came to the outer gate, he was seized by the people, torn about and almost killed, among deafening shouts of "Down with that traitor." At last his friends and followers managed to rescue him, and the whole throng crowded into the great hall, amid a scene of such turmoil as those quiet cloisters had probably never witnessed to that hour. The passions of the people were mightily inflamed; and as the abbot set foot within the hall, Leonard Burgh, one of the leaders of the people, drew his

dagger and made a sudden slash, which had gone near to end the abbot's troubles and dismiss him from this weary world by a road more straight and easy than the one designed for him. But others caught the ruffian's arm ; and as the abbot came on further into the howling mob, one William Asleby, a chief captain in those parts, cried out, "Traitor, where hast thou been?" while others cried, "Geate a block and strike off his head."

Such was the conduct of those godly men towards an abbot who displeased them. And, indeed, I know not whether the sacredness of his person would have gone far to save him on this occasion, had there not been some among the party cool enough to reflect that an abbot living might profit them better than an abbot dead. So they gave him the alternative of joining their insurrection or of losing his head ; and he very wisely took the course which offered him at least a chance of saving it—a chance which might well appear a certainty when not long afterwards all the scattered bands of insurgents were combined into a mighty army under the banners of almost every lord of note and power in the north : Nevilles and Lumleys, Scropes, Conyers, Nortons and Constables, Fairfaxes, Ellerkars—how could any heart which loved its cause and thought it just not beat high and fast when it saw such a noble gathering of all the pith and marrow of the north gathered under the holy banner of the five wounds of Christ?

I think that most men who have written of the doings of that mighty host have credited it with just and upright purposes ; and have seen in its leaders men capable of any noble work to which their monarch might have put them, had he cared to conciliate and treat them leniently. But he chose rather to hang them in many parts of England for the crows to feast upon ; while his ruthless minister, Thomas Cromwell, found in the rash ardour of men whose faith roused no echo in his heart, and whose honour did but make his treachery the easier, precisely the opportunity he sought of extirpating the great lords.

Where Nortons and Constables suffered, it was not likely that abbots would escape; and so Adam Sedbergh, who had come down from Witton Fell with such reluctance, found the end he had foreseen, and was hanged at Tyburn, a tragic witness of the fate awaiting those who are not strong enough to swim against the stream.

I stand beside the gateway where he met the seething crowd, looking up at the high fell. Its flanks may have been bare moorland in those days, but now the skyline is crowded with dark fir trees, marked out by lighter green of larches, and beyond the trees a line of crumpled hill-tops. Around the old grey ruins two or three gardeners are working. One of them has set down his water-buckets on the gravestone of some abbot, and draws off the water as he needs it, without a thought of who lies under that great stone marked with the crozier. Another mows the grass, sweeping with steady strokes up the nave and into the choir of the church, pausing now and then to jest with his companions. They make it very nice and neat. One would not have it otherwise. And yet there is something incongruous . . . pooh! I am growing captious, and had better go my way up the hill. The ruins of Jervaux are beautifully kept. I can expect that the work will be done at night by fairy hands. It is a pleasant road which runs over the roots of the ridges towards Masham, a road bordering green meadows and pretty woods, but having no conspicuous interest until it debouches on the hillside above the town of Masham, and the valley of the Ure lies spread out below, wide and green, and set between low hills. Masham was a place of note in ancient days, being, indeed, the seat of the younger branch of the great family of Scrope. But they, like their cousins of the house of Bolton, perished off the earth long since; and even the church, a modern building of no striking beauty, contains no memorials of them.

I shall not loiter in this old hill-village, but push on by a somewhat scurvy road until I come to a wayside house which

marks the entrance to Hackfall Woods, which are beyond doubt the loveliest spot upon the Ure, with the possible exception of the falls at Aysgarth. There is no luxuriance of beauty at the outset, for the path by which one is admitted strays on beside a little rivulet which is pretty enough, but by no means striking. The ground drops quickly and the beck plunges down deep dells of fern and bramble, making little falls and splashings which are very pleasant to the ear; while the woods tower up on either hand, and through the green shadows of the trees, on the very summit of the hill, there gleams a grey stone building, catching the full power of the sun. At last the path drops no longer, and suddenly it leads out upon a little plateau overhanging the river, where a hut or summer-house has been built for the accommodation of those who desire to loiter in these woods, which must be among the most beautiful in Yorkshire. For the river, which since it boiled over Aysgarth Falls has rippled on for the most part quietly enough, now chattering, now deep and silent, but rarely broken into foam, has found once more a broken and a stony channel, and the black water races through the gorge flecked with white, gleaming spray, and walled in by fine scars of rock, over which the trees rise on both sides the river in a sea of gold and green. Far down the stream, where it shoots away around another bend, a lofty rock stands out boldly from the forest in the full glow of sunlight, its riven precipices and brown weathered flanks adding to the outlook over rushing river and exquisite gold woodland a sense of age and immobility.

Fountains Abbey.

CHAPTER XIV

FOUNTAINS ABBEY

I SUPPOSE there is no doubt at all that every wise man, and especially every wise cyclist, would go from Hackfall by the road to Tanfield, in which wide and ancient village he might tickle his antiquarian tastes by examining the very splendid Marmion tombs in the church, might sketch the gatehouse of their castle, and best of all might idle away a happy hour on a bridge possessing all the qualities whose absence I deplored at Aysgarth. Moreover, he would go on from Tanfield by a good and pleasant road, skirting a park of ancient hawthorn trees so wide and beautiful as one may not often see in England, and thus come at last to comfortable Ripon, where he would find good entertainment worthy of the wise.

It is late for hawthorns now. They are turning brown in all the hedges: and the road by Tanfield has lost its most conspicuous beauty. Yet I doubt whether it is wise to go plunging

into such a mesh of bad and hilly cross-roads as I engage myself in for no better reason than to get a distant view of Ripon. Let no one imitate me who has less than my placidity of temper; yet if he follow on my tracks, striking ultimately the good highway from Ripon to Pately Bridge, about three miles out from the

West Tanfield.

old cathedral city, he will see a view such as will linger in his memory for many a day,—a rich country falling rapidly to a deep hollow, a high ridge rising on the further side, and near its top, backed up by dark woods and picturesque town build-

ings, the two square Minster towers standing grandly in the shadow.

There are many Ripons to be seen from many points in the surrounding country, but this is the only one which is really fine and striking; for even the Ripon which confronts the wayfarer from Boroughbridge is not seen at such a distance, nor backed by such a noble hill. I turn away from the broad high road with a longing look at its smooth surface, and following the lane which turns off to Aldfield, pass quickly through a little group of hillside farms and cottages, until my attention is arrested by the shattered summit of a vast square tower rising out of the brown woods into the clear sunlight of the summer morning. So strong, so solid is the dark outline of this massive tower that only the swallows which dart through it out into the light again betray it to be a ruin. The broken pinnacles, the absolute stillness of the air, impress my fancy; and the interest deepens when, following with my eye the contours of the ground, I see that what lies before me is no hillside tower, but one which rises from the very bottom of the valley.

A little further down the hill the road falls into woods again, and one is almost at the foot before seeing more than a pretty, narrow valley, with a steep ascent upon the further side. But at the bottom the road winds off upon an old stone bridge, which the monks may have flung across the noisy little river for better access to their mill; and one has no sooner stepped out on this bridge than there comes in sight, built close under the steep escarpment of the rock, a house with shallow wings, so grey and old, and having a front so finely broken with tracery of window and intricacy of rich carving, so subdued in colouring, so worn into a harmony as perfect as that of a mossy bank, that I know not how to analyse or convey to others the delight with which I saw it. The river slips along beneath its front, bordered by an exquisite garden of old-fashioned and sweet-smelling flowers. There are high-clipped yew trees such as the world loved two centuries ago, and a round arched gateway of

the Jacobean days, up whose worn and slightly broken steps yellow poppies bloom and seed themselves and flower year by year. This is Fountains Hall, a place which time has touched very gently and with loving fingers since old Sir Stephen Proctor, quarrying in the ruins of the abbey close at hand, wrought out in stone this fancy so beautiful as to deserve forgiveness even for the loss of that which he destroyed.

It is but a little way past the front of Fountains Hall,

Fountains Hall.

beneath high scars of rock upon the left, until one passes under a mouldering archway which opens on a broad and level sward occupying nearly all the valley bottom; for here the Skell sweeps suddenly aside and washes the high wooded slopes upon the right. On the other hand there are red walls of cliff; and set in the very centre of the meadow, stretching well-nigh across the whole expanse, stands what I have dreamed of and desired in vain to see throughout the whole route I have travelled—a great abbey of the Cistercians, roofless it is true,

and sorely shattered, but neither shapeless nor desecrated, broken yet not ashamed, tended lovingly, and standing grand and solid to this hour with an aspect little changed since those old days when pilgrims and travellers knocked at the gate which now lies open, knowing well they would be fed and sheltered and sped upon their way again.

I say the place is but little changed ; and it is true, for here, alone among all the Yorkshire abbeys, is a ruin which is no puzzle even to the ignorant. There is still the empty window of the church, through which one sees the whole vast length of nave and choir, standing perfect save that the blue sky roofs it and that an even stretch of close-cropped turf gives it a floor more lovely than it ever had in its days of pride And there stretching far across the valley to the right is the long, low, round arcade of the domus conversorum, the workroom of the lay brethren, and above it the walls of the great dormitory, almost perfect in their height, so that I see an outline not very much unlike that which the Cistercians planned when, as the years of poverty passed by and riches showered down upon them, the little band of starving fugitives grew by their own energy into one of the greatest brotherhoods of England.

In this June weather a wonderful beauty has descended on the valley. For the first touch of summer has made the grass spring and the leaves bud fresh and vivid ; while underneath the shadow, far as one can see, along every slope right up to the wall of the abbey and far beyond, there flows a sea of luminous and tender blue, myriads of forget-me-nots flowering in the green grass. Far away under the shadow of the yews which top the red cliffs on the north one can see the soft azure glow ; down by the water's edge it gleams as brightly ; and up the hill, as far as where an old broken wall marks the limit of the monastery, the exquisite blue flush spreads over hillock and over hollow, round copse and tree trunk, while from the still sky, unbroken by a cloud, there descends a flood of early morning light so soft and lucent, casting so warm a radiance on the

magical expanse of flowers, that the heaven itself is not more blue or lovely than the earth. A few weeks ago the whole valley was adorned in the purity of snowdrops; but as the days lengthen, and the sap rises in the trees, and the blood beats higher in the heart of man, the old earth of Fountains, which holds so many baffled schemes, where so many noble dreamers have laid down their aspirations, puts forth this warmer and more human plea, "Forget-me-not."

I cannot cast aside this plea. For what else did I come but to remember those who wrought so greatly in this valley in past days? I turn aside a little to my right, where there is a thicket of yew and beech trees, amid which is one so ancient that its vast girth and boughs are propped by strong supports, so as to maintain as long as may be the ebbing life in its old limbs. The Skell chatters down beneath the shadow of these trees, a narrow, noisy rivulet, passing under an old mossy bridge; and on the hillside just above there stand the wasted remnants of two other yew trees, last of those seven which beheld the first comers to the valley. Twelve hundred years and more the sap has risen in those gnarled old trunks. They were old already at Christmastide of 1132 when Archbishop Turstan, on his way from keeping Noël at his house in Ripon, dropped on this spot the thirteen monks whom he had rescued from St. Mary's Abbey, as told in the third chapter of this work. Those old yew trees saw them coming on that bleak winter's day, saw the rich cavalcade which accompanied the great archbishop, saw the thirteen brethren left in the wilderness in the gathering dusk, with little shelter or protection.

Skelldale was a place of evil reputation in those days, and even four centuries afterwards men remembered that it had been called Thefesdale. "It was a spot," says the old chronicler of Fountains, "left uninhabited in all ages of the past, a mere jungle of brambles, and so placed in the hollow of hills and overhanging rocks that it seemed more fit for the den of animals than for human use." In this solitary

waste these thirteen monks set themselves to realise their dream of holiness. "It was sure a noble sight," the chronicler breaks out, "to see men girded with such faith and fervour that they were not turned aside by the bitterness of winter, nor the terror of their loneliness, nor yet by the lack of every kind of goods. . . . In their purses was no money, in their barns no corn, and for their daily food they had nothing save what the occasional kindness of the archbishop sent them."

"In the centre of the valley," the chronicler goes on, "there stood an elm tree, leafy after the manner of its kind, which used to shelter beasts in winter and in summer, and to it these holy men came for refuge, making beds upon the ground with straw and stubble. . . . All slept or took their meals together underneath this tree, a brotherhood poor indeed, yet mighty in the Lord. . . . By night they rose for vigils, by day they set themselves to labour, some weaving mats, some cutting wood to build an oratory, some tilling garden plots. There was none who ate the bread of idleness, or took his ease till wearied out by toil. They came to meals when hungry, they lay down to sleep when tired; but of sadness or of murmuring there was not one sound, but every man blessed God with gladness."

Now some time afterwards there descended a famine on that land, and the holy men were vehemently stirred, for they had neither bread to eat nor money to obtain it, yet a crowd of poor flocked to them for succour. The abbot sought in all the country round for bread and found none who could give it him. There was want on every side, and at length they were driven to take the leaves of the trees and the herbs that grew upon the ground and make them into pottage. . . . And while this famine lasted there knocked one day at the monastery gate a certain wayfarer clamouring for aid in the name of Christ. The porter answered that he had no bread, but the poor man cried out the more that he was starving, and would not go until he had an alms, begging that for Christ's sake the brethren would

ease his hunger. Now the porter being thus appealed to sought the abbot, and told him of the poor man's importunity ; and the abbot, struck with pity, sent for the brother who had charge of the loaves, and bade him give to the suppliant. But the brother said that there remained for the use of all the monastery only two loaves and a half, which were wanted for certain workmen whose time for meals was at hand. "Give one loaf to the poor man," said the abbot, "and keep the rest for the workmen. Let God provide as He will for us." So the poor man took his loaf and went. And lo ! there stood before the gate two men from Knaresborough, driving a cart laden up with loaves, sent by Eustace Fitzjohn, to relieve the brethren.

Such was the struggle of this little band of pioneers against poverty and every adverse circumstance that could daunt the heart of man ; and there came a time when, wearied out with labour and anxiety, they lost their courage, and had no longer any hope of maintaining themselves in the lonely vale of Fountains, so that they resolved to send their abbot to St. Bernard at Clairvaulx, to set before him, as their father, how great had been their sufferings, and how fruitless. So the abbot went and told his tale ; and St. Bernard was moved to compassion, and bade him bring the monks across the sea, and place them in a grange which he would give them, where they might follow out their vows in peace and safety. But while the abbot was still in France, there died at York one Hugh, dean of the cathedral, a man of great wealth ; and God put it in his heart that for the welfare of his soul he should betake himself with all his goods to the monastery of Fountains. And shortly after, a canon of York, one Serlo, who was also wealthy, did the same ; so that when the abbot returned to the north country the afflictions of the brethren were already at an end ; and from that time the abbey grew and flourished with abundant strength, sending out colonies who carried the rule of

the Cistercians into distant lands, and adding year by year to the grandeur of their abbey buildings till they reared the vast pile which makes this lovely valley famous over all the world.

It is true all this was very long ago, and as I glance out through the trees, across the sparkling stream, and down the flower-strewn slopes to the old broken walls of church and cloister, I realise, with a little shudder, how many generations of mankind have been born and died since the first wattled huts were set up in this valley. But the tale of man's suffering and labours is never old and never fails to touch our hearts, whether it be of to-day or of a thousand years ago, and the noblest memory of this valley is still that of the poor enthusiasts who sought to hew a path to heaven over thorns, and who, we need not doubt, did actually find it.

There is a path which leads out of the thicket up on the side of the hill above the abbey, whence one may look down at the whole pile of buildings, and marvel at the skill with which the monks, when cramped for space by the narrowness of the valley, threw out tunnels over the stream and built across it up to the very margin of the valley. And here in the rock wall which the pathway skirts is a well set back under a pretty arch-way, bearing the name of the great outlaw with whose exploit I should perhaps have begun the story of Fountains, for, indeed, it was not likely that a sequestered dale called Thefesdale would have no tale to tell us about Robin Hood. The monks are said to have preserved bold Robin's bow ; and though this may be a fable, yet we need not doubt that they held in vast respect the vagrant earl who robbed so piously, and gave so freely to the poor, and was actually worsted and tossed into the Skell by one of their own cloth.

It was, I suppose, before the days when Turstan brought hither the truant monks of St. Mary's, that the curtal friar kept the dale against all comers. I grow tired when I attempt to reconcile the dales, so it is better not to try. However, there

the curtal friar was, and his fame was an annoyance to Robin Hood.

So Robin he took a solemn oath,—
It was by Mary free;
That he would neither eat nor drink
Till that friar he did see.

The vow was perhaps more valorous than prudent; for if it is ill jesting between a fu' man and a fasting, it is even worse fighting; and that Robin might have known. Yet it is for these follies that we love the man, and our hearts go with him—mine does at any rate—as he travelled off to find the friar.

And coming into Fountains dale
No further would he ride,
There was he ware of the curtal friar
Walking by the water's side.

The friar had on a harnesse good,
And on his head a cap of steel.
Broad sword and buckler by his side,
And they became him weel.

What a freshness and lusty insolence there is about this fiction what an atmosphere as of the morning of the world.

Robin Hood lighted off his horse,
And tied him to a thorn:
"Carry me over, thou curtal friar,
Or else thy life's forlorne."

Now the friar instead of resenting this insolence by felling Robin to the earth, took him meekly on his back and carried him across the Skell

Lightly leapt Robin off the friar's back.
The friar said to him againe,
"Carry me over the water, thou fine fellow,
Or it shall breed thee paine."

And Robin, not having yet made up his mind about the friar, or settled with himself how far a bout with him would be enjoyable, took the corseletted man of peace upon his back, and carried him again to the bank from which they came. But on

[*To face page* 284.

"*Robin Hood and Littlejohn.*"

the way he made up his mind, and had no sooner set the friar down than he repeated :

"Carry me over the water, my fine fellow,
Or it shall breed thee paine."

The friar took Robin on's back again,
And stept in to the knee ;
Till he came at the middle stream,
Neither good nor bad spoke he.

And coming to the middle stream
There he threw Robin in
And "Chuse thee, chuse thee, fine fellow,
Whether thou wilt sink or swim."

Robin Hood swam to a bush of broome,
The friar to a wigger wand,
Bold Robin Hood is gone to shore,
And took his bow in his hand.

One of the best arrowes under his belt,
To the friar he did let fly,
The curtal friar with his steel buckler,
He put that arrow by.

Robin Hood shot passing well
Till his arrowes all were gone.
They took their swords and steel bucklers
They fought with might and maine.

I really cannot spare the time to recount this battle in all its incidents ; and it is the less necessary to do so since I suppose most of us remember how the two men fought valiantly up and down the meadow without result, till bold Robin sought a boon, to wit, that he might blow a blast upon his horn ; and how the friar, breathless but undismayed, replied rudely, that he hoped his foe would blow so well that both his eyes would drop out. And what followed ? Why,

Robin Hood set his horn to his mouth
He blew out blastes three ;
Half a hundred yemen with bowe bent
Came raking o'er the lea.

I fancy this must have been the only occasion on which Robin showed a disposition to hit below the belt; but it profited him little, for the friar at once capped his stroke by asking leave to "set my fist unto my mouth, and whute whutes three," and at the whutes half a hundred bandogs came running o'er the lea. And then . . . but why go on? do not we all know how the yeoman shot at the bandogs, and how the bandogs caught the arrows in their mouths, and how at last both parties called a truce and joined their forces, and the curtal friar became as famous in all Sherwood as Little John himself, or as Maid Marian, or any other of that group of immortal deities of the great forest, who have come down to us through the night of time, fresh and dewy, and carrying the odour of the woodlands and all the wondrous beauties of the age of pure romance. Who cares in what century of this dull world they lived? Where is the man who will try to bring them down from the lovely land of fancy where they dwell into the thick air of history, and the gross realm of fact? Why, they have soared above it all, as much as a butterfly with gold and azure on its wings is above its chrysalis! In God's name let them stay there, and delight us still, though all the professors in the kingdom seek to prove them shadows!

Well, I have done with Robin for the time, and, indeed, his horn has but little right to ring among these hollows, where for so many longer years it was the chanting of the monks which broke the silence of the winter's night and the early summer dawn, when the grey light came stealing down the crags, and the first whistles of the thrushes responded to the echoes from the lighted church. From this spot where I stand beside the well I look down on the great range of ruined offices—no shapeless mass of humped and neglected mounds, as at Rievaulx—but a clear and ordered sequence of apartments, leading to the great hall of the Abbot's house, where the bases of the pillars still remain in a grand double colonnade, and one set up erect proclaims how noble was the beauty which has been reft from us. I go down by a steep path and stand in

the warm sunshine in the very centre of the hall. Ruined as it is, all is yet so beautiful that there is nothing to regret. The broken pillars are exquisitely stained with lichen, and little flowering plants with delicate tendrils and white blossoms have rooted themselves in the clefts and wrinkles of the crumbling stone. Before me there lies spread out the long narrow valley, of which the Abbey occupies the gate—a vast expanse of lush green meadow land, dappled thickly with buttercups, closed in on either hand by high, dark woods, ringing with the melodious whistle of the blackbirds and with the chatter of the noisy river.

Here, or in some chamber giving on this hall, it was doubtless that the Abbot Thirsk, last but one to occupy a dignity which would have been better bestowed on a better man, had those queer interviews with a goldsmith from Cheapside which were commented upon so sharply by the commissioners sent out by Secretary Thomas Cromwell when he was preparing the Dissolution. "Please it your mastershippe to understand," so ran the dutiful address of the scandalised commissioners, "please it your mastershippe to understand that th' Abbot of Fontance hath so gretly dilapidate his howse, wastede the woods . . . diffamede here a toto populo. Six days before our accesse to this monastere, he committede theft and sacrilege, confessyng the same. At mydnyghte he causede his chapelaine to stele the sexten's keis and towke out a jewel, a crosse of gold with stones. One Warren, a goldsmith of the Chepe, was with him in his chambre at that howre, and then they stole out a gret emerode with a rubie. The said Warren made the Abbot believe the rubie to be but a garnet, and so for that he payede nothing. For the emerode but xx *li.* He sowlde hym also plate without weight or ounces. Howe much th' Abbot therfore therin was deceived he cannot tell, for the trewith ys he is a varra fole and a miserable ideote."

Thus angerly wrote the worthy commissioners; and a more delightful instance of Satan reproving sin is, I should think,

scarce to be found in the annals of mankind. The Abbot committed theft and sacrilege when he sold the plate? Perhaps he did; and what was the nature of the act committed by the King when he gave the whole of Fountains to Sir Thomas Gresham not four years afterwards? Had I been Abbot, and seen that blow coming, as those surely did on whom it fell, I should have stripped the treasury of all its jewels, and had up, not a single goldsmith from the Chepe but every one who would make the journey, rather than leave the contents of the shrines and treasuries as a prize for greedy courtiers, Unscrupulous the Abbot may have been, but his conduct was no proof of folly; and, indeed, the affectation of simplicity is so naturally assumed by the weak seeking to justify themselves before the strong, that I am disposed to guess that Thirsk was in truth no more a "miserable ideote" than the two commissioners themselves.

But what a light this throws on the scramble for the treasures of the monasteries which was going on in those last years before the old foundations were broken up! Was Warren the only goldsmith from the Chepe who scented from afar the wondrous bargains which might be wrenched from the sore necessities of the monks? Surely there must have been a regular stampede of honest traders out of Goldsmiths' Row into all the solitary valleys of the realm, where the munificence of past ages had stored up such priceless jewels, such wonders of rich work in gold and silver, that scarce has there arisen any such chance for plunder or keen bargaining since England was a kingdom.

Sinner as he may have been, old Abbot Thirsk saw some nobility of action before he closed his eyes on a world which had grown troublesome to monks; for he joined the Pilgrimage of Grace, and whether it was with his own good will or not, it can scarce be that he rode to Doncaster with Robert Aske and picked up no crumbs of gallantry and courage on the way. At any rate he swung at Tyburn side by side with the Abbot of

Jervaulx, and so takes his place for ever in that long roll of gentlemen who gave their lives for a cause which none can call unworthy, whether he esteem it wrong or right. He was succeeded in his office by one Marmaduke Bradley, a very wise monk in the opinion of the commissioners, with which doubtful praise I should be content to pass him by, were it not that old Jenkins used to come and see him. Jenkins, at the time when Bradley ruled at Fountains, was butler to Lord Conyers at Hornby in the gate of Swaledale: and used to be sent frequently to Fountains to inquire how the Abbot did. Jenkins's word is, of course, the sole authority for the passage of these courtesies; but the interesting thing is his account of how the monks regaled him. The Abbot always ordered him, he said, a quarter of a yard of roast beef for refreshment,—nine inches of good solid beef. I wish he had told us the thickness of it; but so far as one can judge, it must have been a portentous meal. He had besides wassel, served in a horned cup; and while thus banqueting, old Jenkins saw very nearly the last of Fountains and its monks, for Abbot Bradley ruled for no more than three years, and then the crash came. The monks were driven out of the Eden they had made, stripped of the revenues they had perhaps abused, and Fountains Abbey, that great and lordly House of God, entered on the path of ruin which has given us the wondrous beauty of to-day.

Clear and sparkling, flashing under trails of ivy and a hundred creeping plants which trail their tendrils in the water, the Skell goes murmuring through the old arched tunnels out into the dappled sunlight, filling all the valley with a pleasant sound. I walk on through what was once the Abbot's garden, to the east end of the church, where an archway leads me to the Chapel of the Nine Altars, whose lofty pillars are a miracle of grace, and so I stroll all through the building, stopping now to wonder at the grandeur of the arches, now at the tender grace of the trailing ivy which drops down, all vivid with the sunlight, between each of the barrel arches of the aisles: now

pausing in the great Refectory, now in the Chapter House, till there is borne in upon my mind a great pity for the loss of the ideals which led men to conceive this exceeding splendour. Do we not know how a man loves anything which he has wrought and fashioned with his own intelligence; how his aim expands, how it gains nobility, and his heart shows him uses for his work of which he never dreamed when he began to labour? Such, and a thousand times greater, was the love of the better class of monks for this great Abbey, and such the measure of their

Fountains Abbey.

sorrow when those who had no care for the ends they cherished wrested the tool out of their hands, and would not even use it for a noble purpose, but broke and blunted it in mere debauchery.

And so I come at last to the *domus conversorum*, opening out of the first bay of the nave upon the southern side, cool, dark, and grandly vaulted. Through the empty windows the sun casts flickering lights across the floor, and from the river flowing just without, wavering reflections dance among the black arches of the roof. In this long, solemn cloister is no sign of ruin;

and as I pace along its vast length, letting my sight stray here and there among the clustered shadows at the foot of the great pillars, past and present melt insensibly together, the music of the running stream puts on all the modulations of a low and distant chanting, swelling and falling; and it is only by an effort of imagination that I am able to realise there is no solemn function in the Church behind me; no busy concourse in the Chapter House; no white-robed Cistercians stepping gravely with their downcast looks up the hillside or treading down among the flowers; that the hive is empty, both of bees and drones, and that I, who pace under this superb arcade, half-timid at the sound of my own footfall—a layman, a stranger, and an alien in creed, may wander where I will into the most sacred of those chambers which were once seen by the brethren alone.

I turn out again into the place of flowers, and before I go, stand once more in wonder at the strange, soft beauty of the blue flush which covers all the ground,

> "Those dressed in blue
> Have lovers true."

So says an old north country rhyme; and, indeed, if Fountains, which does but pass from one form of beauty to another all the year, ever lacked true lovers, it would not be in the few days when the forget-me-nots are flowering on the slopes. It is so that Fountains comes back always on my memory, and I see again wide fields of luminous soft blue, out of which the Abbey rises grey and stern, while the ancient tower soars up into the clear air and sunlight, and the swallows skim through the openings of the shattered windows.

My way leads out of Fountains by the Hall again; but before I go I ought to say a word of the great beauty of the gardens of Studley Royal, which one reaches by following the valley; of the grandeur of the trees which flourish in that

sheltered spot, and even more of the generosity with which Lord Ripon throws all, or almost all, of his beautiful domain open to visitors, to wander where they will. But, indeed, my gratitude to him for the care he spends on Fountains absorbs all other feelings; and I can but wish and wish again, though with little hope, that certain other gentlemen in Yorkshire, who have become the guardians of ruins scarce less precious, would but remember how gracious an act it is to render public services which no man can demand of them.

I pass out again by Fountains Hall, and climb up the hill upon my left, whence I have a fine backward view of Fountains, from which, however, my attention is called off by the singular outline of a pointed hill which rises a little way before me, carrying a small building surmounted by a cross, which I should set down as a hermitage or chapel, did I not see garments indescribable flapping on a clothes-line underneath the sacred emblem. Hermits, as all men know, never washed. Did not St. Cuthbert banish soap and water from his island save when, once a year, he received a visit from the monks of Lindisfarne? It cannot, therefore, be a holy man who dwells there; yet I am not on that account less anxious to go up it, and as I trudge up its steep sides, I discover that it must be Howe Hill, and that in truth there was once long ago a chapel standing where now a labouring man rears pigs and poultry, and hopes the devil will not come again within his time as once he did to view the country all round from this high eminence. I suppose I may as well say what the devil wanted. There can be no danger in my speaking of him, when I have just rendered so long homage to the monks. It was Aldborough which excited the ire of the irritable fiend—an ancient Roman city on the hither side of those Hambledon Hills which are just coming into sight, blue and sulphurous in the haze of the afternoon. I shall not see Roman Aldborough even from this high ground, for it was all destroyed and buried, history says by the Danes, and legend

by the devil. At any rate, the devil got on the very top of this peaked hill, and setting one foot before and the other behind, he sang out in a voice of thunder:—

> "Borobrigg, keep out of the way!
> For Aulboro town
> I will ding down."

Which he accordingly did with huge bolts of stone, of which the incredulous, if there be any, may see no less than three sticking bolt upright in the ground near the doomed and miserable town at which the devil hurled them.

But if the vestiges of Aldborough are not in sight, there is, at any rate, a noble and inspiring view spread out before me. For Ripon lies, as I have said, on the last undulations of the broken hill country which occupies the whole of Western Yorkshire, and the height of Howe Hill is enough to top the ridge on which the old town lies, and give a clear, wide view over the great plain, lying green and rich and broken with red farmsteads up to the very foot of the great Hambledons upon the east; while southwards it expands so far that all the outlines melt in haze, and the sight loses itself in an infinitely soft misty blur, just where people say that in clear weather York Minster raises her twin towers on the very sky line. I would that the Cathedral were in sight, for the distant view of that great Minster, which has in all ages summed up the grandeur of the life 'twixt Tees and Don, and made itself a central point in all the stormy vicissitudes of Yorkshire, would be a fitting background to a prospect which ranges almost from the Field of Marston to that on which was fought the Battle of the Standard.

Looking down upon this noble country, studded with famous houses, sown with tragedies, a man might muse daylong on tales which find their niche in history or legend. But the afternoon is waning fast, and I am due at a certain farm I know of. I must tell my tales to morrow: and so I saunter down

the hill again, and strike across the summer lanes till I reach a pleasant meadow, where a little stream runs down through its own well-wooded valley to the Skell. Just at the head of this tributary valley, where the pasture breaks off and the woods begin, there stands a goodly farm, a long, low house facing to the south, so that the roses climbing round its windows catch the sunlight. In the porch stand the farmer and his wife with a north-country welcome, than which none other is more cordial and frank. The house is full of the sweet odour of fresh-baked bread. In the house place, large enough to seat fifty people, a Yorkshire supper is set out, such as those who have sat down to it may well dream of all their days, and the hospitality is graced with kindness so downright and so frank that the time goes by without my marking it. When I go to the door again, the moon has risen high and silvery over the dale. The apple trees are still in flower, and a sloping gravel path runs down beneath them till it is lost among tall woods, out of which the plashing of the little stream rings out plainly over the still fields. The birds have done singing, and the night is falling fast. There is a keenness in this northern air, after sundown, which makes it comfortable to shut the door, and see the lamplight gleaming on the old polished pans and pewter hanging from the wall, and listen to the farmer's stories of old life which he remembers, until my hostess shows me to a room all sweet with lavender, and telling me some story of a ghost which haunts it, to which vain legend I pay no more heed than any tired man would give it, leaves me to my slumber.

CHAPTER XV

RIPON AND KNARESBOROUGH

Rye pudding makes, as I am told, an excellent dish to set before hungry men. It is not that they like it, as a rule; indeed, I have not yet heard of any one who chose it for a birthday feast, or who begged his cook to make him one because he loved it. But it is clogging to the appetite, and is thus high in favour with those housewives who have many mouths to feed. There was one such worthy dame at Markenfield, not far from Fountainsdale. Her rye puddings were daily set before her twelve farm labourers, and they were as hard as brickbats, and the twelve men loathed them. Now, one day a noble pudding of this kind had just been taken from the copper, and was being borne in state into the Great Hall at Markenfield by four strong men, when suddenly it bounced off the dish and began to roll. The four men grabbed at it, but it rolled too fast and went by them easily, bounding nimbly through the hall, banging open the door, which stood ajar, and so out into the quadrangle, across which it skimmed and twisted as if shot out of a catapult, till, underneath the outer gateway, it encountered the twelve labourers coming into dinner. Right into the midst of them it charged, while the men, who had never seen a rye pudding acting so before, scattered right and left in terror. But one, more plucky than the rest, threw his reaping-hook at it as it went by, and hit it,

and split it open. Otherwise, so I am told, there is but little doubt that the pudding would have been rolling to this hour.

Now this is a notable event; and I know some other reasons for seeking out Markenfield; so that it will be time well spent to diverge from the direct road to Ripon, crossing one or two pretty fields—all fields are pretty in this angle of the earth—and penetrating a small wood, till we reach the old grey hall lost in the middle of the meadows. Doubtless there was once a fit approach to Markenfield; but I have never found it. One wanders up and down among a maze of gates and sheep-folds; and, after floundering to and fro sufficiently, one emerges on the corner of a moat, one scarce knows how. A small bridge thrown across the moat leads into a fine courtyard, on the further side of which the great windows of the Hall and Chapel break the irregular outline of the centre building. The house is of many periods; some part, perhaps, as ancient as the Edwards; some betraying by its handsome windows that it was built in an age when there was but little fear of Scots' incursions. In this wide courtyard the tenantry must have been mustered for the march to Flodden, where Sir Ninian Markenfield held a command: and here, too, three generations later, there were gatherings in a cause perhaps as gallant, but by far less glorious. For Thomas Markenfield, grandson of the old warrior just named, was one of those north-country gentlemen who, in the days when English Catholics had hopes of setting Mary Stuart on the throne, and were busy seeking aid from Alva and his Spanish pikes, met at the Percies' house of Maiden Bower in Topcliffe, not ten miles away to the east of Ripon, and there sat waiting for news that the men of the East Country were up, with the Duke of Norfolk at their head. But the Duke was taken, and the eastern counties did not rise; and the gallant company of gentlemen at Topcliffe would have done well to ride back to their homes again. But rarely did a Percy or a Neville hold his hand from a rebellion; and many another gentleman who sat beside them on that October night

at Topcliffe was sick at heart with disappointed hope that he might live to hear mass sung again in Ripon Minster, and to see the monks march back again to empty Fountains in a long procession. Markenfield himself had lived many years abroad because England Protestant was distasteful to him; and coming home for one purpose only, had found a fiery coadjutor in Richard Norton, whose name is still remembered here at Ripon, where he dwelt at Norton Conyers, as clearly as at Bolton, where the verse of Wordsworth has linked it with associations among the loveliest in literature.

"The residue of your doltish captaines," broke out another Norton in an "Addresse to the Quene's Majestie's poor deceived Subjects of the North," "the residue of your doltish captaines, what be they? Thinke you they be men able to beare you out against the power of a prince, all his nobilitie, cities, realme, subjectes, frendes, and allies? One with little witte far sette (Swynborne), another in his old age weary of his wealth (Norton), another a runneaway with a young wilde braine tickled to see fashions." This last was Markenfield, as an unfriendly and contemptuous opponent saw him; and since every man may belabour the fugitive adherent of a lost cause, it has been scarce worth the while of any wanderer in these bypaths of history to correct or test the judgment. What does it matter now whether Markenfield was light of wit or not? It is not always those whose brains are firm and steady who figure best in the judgment of posterity. Perhaps poor Markenfield, when he thought of Mary Stuart languishing at Tutbury, was blinded by a glamour which turned many an older head than his. But does any one think it was self-interest which made him mount his horse here for the last time on that October day, and ride off to tilt against the Government of Elizabeth Tudor, who neither pardoned nor forgot? Idealist he may have been, but there was no mean motive in his heart when he staked the home and possessions of an ancient family, and set out upon that quest whence in a few short weeks he sped back

a broken fugitive, a landless exile, who saved his life with difficulty oversea. Even his young brother John, a lad not twenty at the time, was attainted, so that there might be no male heir entitled to the lands; and so perished the old family of Markenfield, lost like many another in this great kingdom by adherence to a cause which, having ceased to touch men's reason, did but appeal the more passionately and poignantly to their hearts.

I do not doubt that in all parts of England there have been many found who staked their lives as nobly as the Yorkshiremen upon a falling cause. Nor do I fail to see that in the great revolts which have seared the life and beauty of that vast county, there were many motives: much love of turbulence and fighting, not a little frothy passion, doubtless many mean and selfish ends to serve. But in looking down the centuries, and marking how the Yorkshiremen clung with the whole power of their strong and simple wills to first one and then another of the lost causes in this kingdom; how they were Cavaliers among the noblest; how they rose in two armed revolts on behalf of the old religion which they loved: how the Red Rose of King Henry and the White Hart of the Second Richard were enshrined in the hearts of rich and poor alike, long after the last lance had been splintered and the last blood shed which was poured out so freely for those fugitive and unhappy monarchs; when I remember all these acts of pure devotion, I am inclined to credit the men of York with carrying, under a somewhat rough exterior, all the faith and courage of idealists. One respects good judgment, but one very often loves the bad.

As I turn away and regain the rough lane which leads me towards Ripon, I can see beyond the ridge where the Minster lies in morning shadow a mass of woods which catch the sunlight. There, or thereabouts, lies the house of Norton Conyers, home of that old Richard Norton, who was so fierce a fellow-rebel with Markenfield and Swynborne. It is a noble house, and I would fain ride out there where the memories of the

Rebellion lie so thick, and thence to Topcliffe, that ancient village of the Percies, where so many plots were hatched. But "Maiden Bowere," that great mansion of the noblest and most

Ripon.

tragic Yorkshire house, is nothing but a grassy mound, and Topcliffe is only a wide, silent village, sleeping on the memory of its stormy days. There are men yet in the village who will

point out with a certain awe the lineal descendant of him who led a mob against the house of Maiden Bower four centuries ago, and slew with his own hand Henry, Fourth Earl Percy—so long does the memory of tragedies linger in country places in the North. But for the most part the villagers of Topcliffe value as their chief celebrity a certain villager who is old enough to remember that in the days when half the coaches for the North stopped to change horses at the inn, he and other urchins used to listen for the first distant tootling of the horn, and scurry down and scramble for the penny which was the guerdon of the boy who first caught the leader's head.

There is nothing else to be found at Topcliffe; but there clings a tale to Norton Conyers which is well worth telling. Long after the Nortons had been lost and scattered, the estate was the property of Sir Richard Graham, who, following the losing side as resolutely as any Norton, was sore wounded on the field of Marston Moor; and when the day was lost, and he himself, spent and bleeding, had no longer power to strike one blow for the King, he turned his horse's head towards his home at Ripon, with the sole desire to die among his own people and under his own roof. But Cromwell—so the story runs—had watched Sir Richard riding off the field, and resolved that he should not so escape, and came riding in his traces at the full speed of his great warhorse. But Sir Richard had the lead, and was well mounted, and his horse smelt home. So the two men galloped through the summer dusk, through Hammerton and Boroughbridge, and by a score of farms where the lights were out and labouring men and women were sleeping without thought of war, till Sir Richard gained his home far in advance of Cromwell, and lay down in his chamber hoping to die in peace. But the breath was still in his body when Cromwell thundered up, and without dismounting rode straight into the hall and up the staircase and into the chamber where Sir Richard lay—you may see the impression of his horse's hoof on the top of the oak staircase to this day; and there, in

a very ecstasy of fury took the dying man in his gauntleted arms and shook him till he died.

Such is the wild tale which legend, seeking always to localise itself on well-known people, has fathered upon Cromwell. It is a striking piece of folklore, and I hardly care to point out that

Ripon Cathedral.

it does not square with the known facts about Sir Richard Graham, since it belongs obviously to an age far more remote. But here is Ripon, an unimpressive spot when one approaches it from this side, though, as I have said, a rare, picturesque old

town when seen from the proper quarter. A steep street leads up to a wide, square market-place, rather picturesque, though once, surely, it must have boasted a fine cross, where an ugly obelisk now stands. Out of this square a narrow lane runs down to the Cathedral, small, but pure in style, and having a west front of austere simplicity, which is probably as fine an example of Early English as could be found. In a county where noble churches were less common, Ripon would hold an honourable place. But in Yorkshire it suffers from the force of contrast. I remember Beverley, and Ripon leaves me cold. Silent and empty stand the aisles which were once so thronged with pilgrims, and many a day has gone by since St. Wilfrid, who breathed courage into the hearts of the warriors beneath his banner on the plain beyond Northallerton, has cared to show that he remembers his ancient city on the Ure. There were wondrous stories told about this city once—or, rather, about the Monastery round which it grew. For here St. Cuthbert sojourned when a young man; and being guest-master for the monks, was blessed so far as to receive an angel of the Lord. For going out early to the Hospice on a winter morning while it was still not day, he found a young man sitting there whom he conceived to have travelled through the night and snow, and to have turned aside at dawn in search of rest. So he gave him water to wash his hands, and himself bathed and wiped the stranger's feet, chafing them with his hands and warming them in his own bosom; and he begged the guest to stay till the third hour of the day, that he might take food and start refreshed upon his road again. The stranger answered that he was travelling to an abode very far away, and that he could not linger; but Cuthbert was the more urgent, and implored him in the name of God that he would not depart without refreshment. So the guest stayed; and after the prayers of the hour of tierce were over, and meal time was at hand, Cuthbert laid the table and brought food, and hurried away in search of some new bread, which he thought must then be

ready. But when he returned he found no guest, and going to the door, and looking out over the new-fallen snow, he saw no print of feet upon the threshold, nor any sign to show which way the traveller had gone. So wondering greatly, he turned back into the guest-room, and found it full of a marvellous sweet savour, and looking round to see whence that odour came he saw three loaves of extraordinary whiteness lying warm beside him. And he said, trembling, "I see that he whom I received was an angel of God, coming to feed, not to be fed. Lo! this earth cannot produce such loaves as he has brought,

Ripon Cathedral.

for they excel lilies in whiteness, roses in scent, and honey in savour. Clearly they have not sprung from this heavy earth of ours, but from the Paradise of Eden. And no marvel that he who enjoys the Eternal Bread of Life in Heaven should refuse to partake of earthly food."

It is a thousand years and more since the angel visitor fled away from the monastery gate over the untrodden snow; and Cuthbert, who chafed the stranger's feet and warmed them in his own bosom, has slept almost as long in Durham, himself a saint, and the best loved memory in the Church history of

northern England. In all Ripon I doubt if five people know this tale; though in a city set so plainly on the bedrock of a vast antiquity, men's thoughts must often be turned backwards to the lives of those who dwelt before them on the hillock by the Ure. Even the horn which is blown nightly by the market cross might serve to carry back imagination almost as far as the horn of Bainbridge; for indeed that blast has rung through the market place of Ripon night by night for more centuries than any one remembers, a summons out of old past times, a challenge to our careless minds and hurrying feet to pause when the rush of work is over and silence is dropping on the city, and remember that we who count these cities ours did not make them, but are only travellers through, bound to pass on like all the others, giving place like them to new generations, who will set aside our claim to ownership with just the same haughty insolence towards the dead.

As I turn down the hill and pass through the lower quarter of the town, where the river slips by quietly beneath an old stone bridge, I have some trouble in remembering that this is, indeed, the water which came over Aysgarth Falls, so tamed and broken is the wild mountain freshness which streamed down the limestone shelves in Wensleydale. Some anticipation of its outfall into the sluggish Ouse has sobered the wilful river, which slips along between the meadows towards Newby as if it had no thought but to reflect the hawthorn and wild roses. But in the winter, Ure is often turned into a deep and swirling torrent; and I do not know how I can go on by the road to Boroughbridge without mentioning the tragedy which happened thirty years ago a little way below this spot, and which has left on the minds of most men living in the district a trace of terror and of pity which will last their lives.

There was a large flat-bottomed ferry-boat which plied across the river by a chain just opposite to Newby Hall; and on February 4th, 1869, the York and Ainsty Hunt, after a fine run from Monkton Whin, came down this way. The fox took the

water; and the hunt crowded into the ferry boat, men and horses, some dismounted and some riding still. The river was high and flowing rapidly. The chain ran on one side of the boat, which had thus a natural tendency to tilt downwards on that side. The boat was overcrowded, men and horses were alike excited, and when near the bank, Sir Charles Slingsby's horse began to kick. Other horses became restive, and pressed down towards the chain. The next moment Sir Charles Slingsby's horse leapt overboard, and in an instant the boat turned over like the leaf of a book. No one who saw that awful scene cares to speak much of it. Sir Charles, last heir of a race as noble as any in the north, was lost with two other members of the hunt, as well as the huntsman and both ferrymen.

There is no lack of tragedies both old and modern on this country side; and here already are the wide dull streets of Boroughbridge, where some may spare a thought of pity for the great Earl Thomas of Lancaster, who was beheaded at Pontefract, as I have said already. For it was here that after waiting vainly for the Scots, on whose aid he reckoned, he flung himself on his knees before a crucifix in a chapel of the town, crying out, "Good Lord, I render myself to Thee, and put myself in Thy mercy." But he erred, for it was into the mercy of that weak and violent monarch the second Edward, that he put himself; and the king's mercy ended in the edge of the sword on a hillock outside Pontefract. Let him go by out of memory; for, worshipped as he was by the common people, I doubt if he was in truth heroic. It is a greater and an older tragedy which makes this region famous: but to find its scene we must go on from Boroughbridge for a mile or so, till we come to a small sloping village, set pleasantly on the side of a low hill, in the midst of a rich and fertile country, studded with orchards and gardens, where masses of pinks and stocks and every other fresh sweet-scented flower fill the air with fragrance. So bright and sweet is all the country round that it is easy to believe that this

may indeed have been the summer city of the Romans, the pleasant quarters among fields to which those rulers fled when the low streets of York grew thick and sultry, or when in autumn the vapours from the marshy shore of Ouse set them longing for the sweet air that blows down from the moors.

Few people who pass through this long irregular village could dream that any relics of a splendid past lay hidden in the earth. For above ground there is no sign of ruin, no indication of importance in the past, no hint that the pretty village had caught up a tale which it could not finish, or thrust itself upon a site which still possessed the prestige of former greatness. You will go into the garden of the inn, and follow your guide down all its length till you come to a rough shed, just such a one as any gardener might use for tools. The guide unlocks it, discloses a floor thickly strewn with sawdust on which he begs you not to step; and while you stand aside, wondering a little whether anything of value can indeed be stored up in so poor a place, he seizes a broom, and brushing off the sawdust reveals a mass of glowing colours, out of which but little of the beauty has yet faded, though fifteen centuries or more have passed since the cubes of the mosaic were set by the cunning workman in the wet cement. A star of eight points issues from a circle, the whole a miracle of dainty workmanship, a gem of colour, surely the masterpiece of some great craftsman who came from over seas at the summons of a lord of wealth and power.

The sun gleams through the open doorway on the vivid colours. The guide stands leaning on his mop. Just outside there is a bed of onions, and a pile of baskets waiting for the crop of ripening strawberries. But this fine pavement was not set in any garden. It must have been the ornament of some great noble's house. Day by day the shadows of a pillared colonnade slanted over it, and all this ground now given up to raspberries was doubtless set with statues and with fountains,

triumphs of craft as precious as the pavement. "Surely," one thinks, "it was the country villa of some great official, count of the Saxon shore, or master of a legion." A few yards away there is another pavement, and in a cottage higher up the street there is a third, and in all Aldborough there are no less than nine entire, with relics of some others; while you cannot scratch the soil in any spot within the circuit of the old city walls without the prospect of disclosing pottery, or tools, or coins, such as were long known as "Aldborough pennies," and seem actually to have formed a currency in the district by their very plenty—bronze of Constantine and Hadrian passed at the village shop, or paid to wipe off the score for beer chalked up behind the tavern door!

Thus it is clear that in old days when the Roman wall held back the Picts in their own wild country, Isurium—such was the name of the lost city—was a group of palaces. One asks what was the end of all that splendour; and the question is one that is very quickly answered. For here and there where excavations have been made, there is found strewn over all the ruins of the buildings a layer of dense fine ashes. Not in one spot or two, where it might have been heaped up by chance, has this tell-tale dust been found. It pervades the town; it has fallen black and heavy over house and temple, speaking clearly of the terror of those days when the fierce barbarians broke in upon the pleasure-loving city, stripped long before of the legions which gave it safety while they taught it luxury. I do not know how long Isurium survived after the Romans went, before the wolves swooped down on it. Perhaps, before the final slaughter, many of the citizens may have fled up into the hills, trusting themselves and their children rather to the wet caves of Settle than to the hands of barbarians who knew no mercy. But for every one who fled to that slow death in misery and darkness I do not doubt that five remained here in Isurium; and when the last day came, and the axes went on hacking through the streets, and the temples were profaned,

and the palaces stripped of all their wealth, there was beyond doubt a piteous scene of slaughter acted on this hillside, children and women hunted through the streets where their husbands and fathers had been slain—and in the end, when the conquerors were tired of killing, and of plundering things whose beauty they did not understand, they set fire to the whole, and from their distant refuge on the hills the frightened exiles must have looked down day by day on the site of their noble city veiled in a black cloud of smoke, till at last the embers ceased to smoulder and the exiles were all dead, and the country scourged by the Danes was left desolate and uninhabited, so that grass grew upon the ruins and the city was not rebuilt, but only a vague memory lingered of an "old burgh" that had stood there.

Such was the end of old Isurium. The tale has made me melancholy; and, indeed, if I may venture on a gentle criticism of a country which I love, it does appear to me that tragedies lie rather thick about this district. Yorkshiremen in all ages have shown a genius for getting into trouble; and here before me, in the charming old town of Knaresborough, whither I am going between the wild rose hedges and the honeysuckles as fast as my two wheels will carry me, is another tale of woe, of which I was so heartily tired before I ever came to Yorkshire that I vowed I would not mention it,—nor should I have done so were it not that I find the folk of Knaresborough a trifle apt to expect all strangers to drop a tear in memory of that atrocious scoundrel, Eugene Aram. I say at once, therefore, that I have no sympathy at all with this poor drivelling creature, who could not even keep his counsel about the sordid crime he had committed. To be a criminal may, or may not, be a proper object of ambition. To be an unsuccessful one is plainly base; and when the failure comes by reason of the weakness of a sloppy, sentimental mind, which must needs confide its guilt to the unsympathetic bosom of a small schoolboy, I can only say that Aram had quite mistaken his own

Knaresborough.

talents, and should have chosen some much easier path, where a weak and silly head would be in less danger of the gallows.

But here upon the hillside are the first houses of the ancient town, as old, perhaps, in its origin as Isurium itself, for the Romans were prompt to find out mineral springs, and doubtless knew the properties both of "Sweet Spaw," which bubbles up some three miles out, within the bounds of the old famous forest, and of that which has been both elegantly and justly called "Stinking Spaw." On approaching Knaresborough from Boroughbridge one has no more idea of the beauty of the town than one has on approaching Richmond; and it is only on following the steep descent till it runs out upon a handsome bridge that one sees the many coloured houses climbing in a dense mass of roofs and gardens up a lofty cliff, while the river, swift and smooth, sweeps round sharply through the woods which close the prospect, and over all the blackened ruins of the castle recall the day when feudal lords of vast power dwelt in this stronghold on the borders of what was then a wild and solitary forest, well stored with game and traversed only by few paths which travellers could follow.

These lords of Knaresborough possessed the true north-country aptitude for taking a hand in any mischief which was going on. The murder of Becket was one of the most striking pranks of mediæval times, and, accordingly, no one will be surprised to find that the Lord of Knaresborough, Hugh de Morville, was one of the four knights who broke into Canterbury Cathedral in the dusk of the winter afternoon and slew the great archbishop. It is said that the four murderers took refuge in this castle, where they dwelt for a full year cut off from all society—I should have thought there was not much to lose in Knaresborough so very long ago. However, in the end all was made well by the customary expiation of a journey to the holy land; so I suppose there is no truth in those veracious tales still current in Devon which avow that Tracy, another of the four, spends his time still in howling upon stormy nights

up and down the coast near Ilfracombe, unable to win pardon or repose.

Knaresborough would have been of little account in Yorkshire had it been ignored by holy men; but with rare wisdom it concentrated its holiness upon a single hermit, in preference to spreading it over a whole monastery, and so succeeded in producing a saint, which Fountains, with all its superior grandeur, was never able to do. St. Robert, while still young, tried several monasteries. He coquetted with Whitby and with

Knaresborough.

Fountains, but found no scope in either of them; and at length, wandering up and down in the neighbourhood of Knaresborough, he met a hermit, whose way of living pleased his fancy so enormously that he persuaded the good man to let him share his cell. Had the hermit known how difficult Robert had found it to live in the society of many at Whitby and at Fountains he might have doubted the prudence of admitting one so restless to a share of the parched peas and crystal well which had been his solitary joy. The event was what might

have been foreseen. Two hermits in a cell agreed no better than two boys in one bed. Robert was soon left in sole possession, which suited him exactly. He said the original hermit had gone back to the world again. Perhaps he had. Nothing to the contrary is known ; and Robert, succeeding to the sanctity of both, very soon became a saint indeed.

William Estoteville, who was Lord of Knaresborough in those days, was incredulous about the piety of the hermit. "He is rather," said the surly baron, "a receiver of thieves." I wish Estoteville had given the evidence for this opinion ; because I myself . . . but that is of no interest now. At any rate, it is admitted that whereas Robert began in a dreary cave all by himself, it was not long before a rich matron gave him the chapel of St. Hilda, with some land "and its appurtenances." I do not know what the appurtenances comprised ; but they enabled this poor hermit to keep four servants, two of whom were employed in tillage, one on "various occasions"—a pretty and suggestive phrase—and a fourth, whose sole business was to collect alms from the pious. I sometimes wonder whether Robert found it better to confer this honourable duty on a small and weakly man, whose emaciation might rouse pity in the traveller, or on some sturdy ruffian, who might collect alms with a cudgel. Perhaps he kept both kinds among his servants ; and that is why Estoteville spoke so harshly of him, and ordered his cell to be torn down.

It was of very little use in mediæval days to tear down the cells of hermits who were backed by the powers of heaven—not to mention four servants ; and so Estoteville, riding in the forest not long after, saw smoke curling up among the trees, and asked his attendants whence it came. They said it came from the cell of Robert the Hermit ; and Estoteville, who had fancied the holy man was disposed of, swore by—somebody has blotted out the oath with so thick a pen that I could not read it, though I held the page up to the light—swore in this awful manner that St. Robert should no longer play the hermit in his

forest. But of what use is it to swear at hermits? In a few weeks Estoteville was St. Robert's chief supporter; and having thus won over all his enemies, the saint went on growing holier and holier, as well as richer, till, when he died, the monks of Fountains, who were always worrying round Yorkshire for a saint, being, as I have said, quite unable to breed one for themselves, came over in force, and did their very utmost to secure his bones. However, they went back again without him; and I really do not know where the dust of the hermit reposes at this hour. Nor is it now of more than antiquarian interest, for the dry bones have long ceased to work miracles; and as that is so, we may as well go on from saints to witches, who may possibly possess more power.

Happy, yea, thrice happy, is the town which the powers of heaven and of hell have combined to render famous! It is a rare case, and I doubt if there are five towns in this illustrious kingdom which can show two natives so justly famous as St. Robert and Mother Shipton.

Ursula Shipton's mother was a witch. She entered on that high vocation at the early age of fifteen. The parentage of one who has left so strong a mark on the intelligence of servant girls must be a matter of decided interest; and, therefore, I think it well to say that Agatha Shipton was much annoyed at the excessive interest manifested in her proceedings when, in or about the year 1486, she made the usual compact with the devil. Prying people seemed to her to sin against good manners, so she resolved to read them a lesson, and a suitable occasion presented itself not long afterwards at a breakfast party where most of her ill-bred neighbours had presented themselves. The first thing that happened was that one worthy gentleman found the ruff torn off his neck, and certain faggots hung there in its place. This seemed very comic to the friend who sat by him, and he chuckled vastly over the joke, until he found his own hat whisked away and replaced by a pewter vessel. A young lady sat opposite to

these two sufferers, and seeing them adorned so quaintly she was quite unable to refrain from laughing; and having once begun to laugh, she could not stop, but sat laughing for full a quarter of an hour, while all the rest of the company were so inordinately merry at her mirth that they too laughed, and not one of them could stop, but all guffawed so loudly that the master of the house came running upstairs hastily to know what had happened. But when about to enter the room he found he could not, and no wonder—for the oldest man living, says the chronicler, never saw a larger pair of horns than he had on his head. Suddenly all these witcheries vanished into air; the guests sat silent, resting their tired sides, and in the same moment there resounded from the ceiling a sound as if a hundred persons were laughing boisterously at their discomfiture, yet no one could be seen.

This was a thought disquieting, and the guests resolved that they had better go home at once. They had no sooner descended to the courtyard than they found themselves pelted with rotten apples, thrown by unseen hands; and when, terrified and breathless, they mounted and spurred away from the enchanted place, behind every man there rode a little deformed old woman, whipping up the horse, till the poor beasts flew rather than galloped back into the town. Of course there was an inquiry before the magistrates. Agatha Shipton quite admitted that the whole disturbance was her work. She scoffed at threats of punishment; declared that if they worried her she would do as much again; and, finally, bored by the solemnity of the proceedings, called out loudly "Updraxi, call Stygician Helluei," whereupon there appeared in court a horrid winged dragon, and carried her away triumphant on his back.

From a parentage so potent great things were naturally looked for; and Mother Shipton disappointed no one's hopes, being, indeed, from the moment of her birth a portent more remarkable than any other which had tumbled from the skies since Yorkshire was a county. Exact descriptions of her

[*To face page* 314

"*Sat laughing for full a quarter of an hour.*"

appearance are on record; but she was so very ugly that they make me shiver, and I will not print them. She led her nurse an awful life. The poor woman did not know sometimes for days together what had become of her small charge, who used to come tumbling through the ceiling just when she had abandoned hope of ever seeing her again. Even this was not the worst that she had to undergo, for demons of all kinds were always about the dear child's cradle. Beelzebub taught her fairy tales, and Belphegor dandled her upon his knee.

Of her performances in riper years need I say much? Is there a child among us who does not know the things she prophecied—the motor cars, the ironclads, the Crystal Palace, the Crimean war, yes, even Klondyke was not hid from her far-seeing vision. Does any one doubt it? Let him listen.

Carriages without horses shall go
And accidents fill the world with woe.
Iron in the water shall float
As easily as does a wooden boat.
A house of glass shall come to pass
In England, but, alas!
War will follow with the work
In the land of the Pagan and the Turk.
Gold shall be found, and found
In a land that's not now known.

There is a great deal more of the same sort, with many cryptic sayings which make my head ache when I try to interpet them. Go thy ways, good Mother Shipton, born of demons, and taught by the enemies of all mankind. Of all thy prophecies and wisdom there remains nothing but the giggling of silly servant girls and a shrug of the shoulder from the wise man passing on to other things. But Knaresborough is still itself, undecayed and beautiful as in all ages of its history. The castle may have crumbled. Great families may have come and passed. Storms, and revolutions, and sieges have broken on the town and swept off like the changes of a dream. The forest is disparked. No horn ever rings within the glades, nor

has any living man heard the baying of the gazehounds re-echo over moor or hollow where once the merry music used to float down the wind so often. The very art of archery is lost. The boys who used to learn so painfully the forest bounds were long since grandfathers, and not one urchin nowadays could say where the forest ended. Customs, habits, yes, the very language have all changed. Nothing is the same except the hill and the many coloured houses with their sloping gardens, and the brown moorland water sweeping round its base so swift and steady. It is evening, and a small feathery moon has risen over the treetops, casting a faint shimmer on the water. One or two lights are gleaming on the hillside, and a boat comes up against the stream with a brilliant Chinese lantern in its stern. There is a sound of voices on the water, boys playing in the empty boats as others must have played before them any time these ten centuries and more. Silence is dropping down on Knaresborough; and as I walk back through the empty streets to my hotel, the summer night is filled with infinite sweet odours and with little rustling sounds, as if some presence out of the old past were labouring to tell me something high and solemn, and yet was inarticulate.

Ripley.

The Wharfe at Bolton Abbey.

CHAPTER XVI

WHARFEDALE, BOLTON PRIORY, AND SKIPTON.

I WISH I had not heeded old Sir Thomas Brown when he told me many chapters back that deliberating delay would be a wise cunctation. I was all too much inclined to loiter when the worthy knight pulled me by the sleeve ; and encouraged by his sententious suggestions, I have let time slip and slouched along the hedgerows picking flowers as if I were no more bound to hasten than any vagrant gypsy, who may unyoke his pony by the roadside when he pleases, and cares not if he reach his journey's end that night or not.

Dear old philosopher, that attitude of mind may do for Norfolk, where the acreage is less, and the interest —if I may say it—so far inferior. But here in Yorkshire he who loiters will pay the penalty by leaving many a place unseen which he

would fain have visited ; and as I ride swiftly on from Knaresborough, past the unlovely outskirts of Harrogate, towards the opening of the long Wharfe Valley, I remember with a pang that I had meant to visit Adel, and Harewood, where that sturdy old Chief Justice Gascoigne, who feared neither king nor prince, lies sleeping in the church ; and Farnley, with many another place which I have dreamt of seeing since my childhood, but now must go by, lest I leave out greater things. Perhaps it is as well ; for who can carry in his mind every noble thing there is in Yorkshire, or store his memory with all its excellences without reducing the whole to one mixed blur ?

Harrogate.

Otley lies in the opening of Wharfedale, a wide and spacious gateway to the moors. Low hills, well wooded, flank it on the south, and on the north a few ridges of high ground far away across the fertile valley mark the entrance of that wide dale which narrows quickly to a beauty so exceeding. The town has little distinction, save in the noble wooded slopes which drop down from the Chevin and from "Jenny's Hill" to the very borders of the town,—a foretaste of the heights to which the valley bounds will rise when the gorge narrows and woods and pastures give place to the brown moor. There is no waste

land as yet upon the slopes ; and through the wide green valley the river runs on placidly with an unbroken surface, yet swirling here and there in eddies which betray the power of the current. "In summer, too," says Camden, "it is very dangerous ; as I experienced to my cost in my first tour in these parts." I wish the good man had not given only half his confidence ; yet even as they stand, without the details, these few feeling words may serve to restrain the eagerness of any who might think it safe to dabble in the Wharfe.

"Wharfe is clear and the Aire lithe,
Where Aire kills one, Wharfe kills five."

Pass. Bolton to Harrogate.

So says an ancient saw. Indeed, I am very glad that Camden was not one of the number, and that he paid no heavy price for the lesson to mistrust the pretty swirling stream which washes up so pleasantly among the forget-me-nots and meadow-sweet upon its banks.

As I follow up the valley, threading the fields over an atrocious road, the river begins now and then to show its teeth, the brown water flashes into white over a jagged rock, and an occasional waste of moorland on the left shows that I

am drawing near the region of those downs where the monks of Bolton used to graze their herds of sheep and cattle. Presently a fine crag rises on the hilltop, a dark splintered cairn of storm-worn rock. It is Ben Rhyddyng, and the turrets of the great Hydropathic are just below, almost at the beginning of the moor, which sweeps on brown and sombre from that point, roughened here and there by woodlands, till it is lost in thin blue haze.

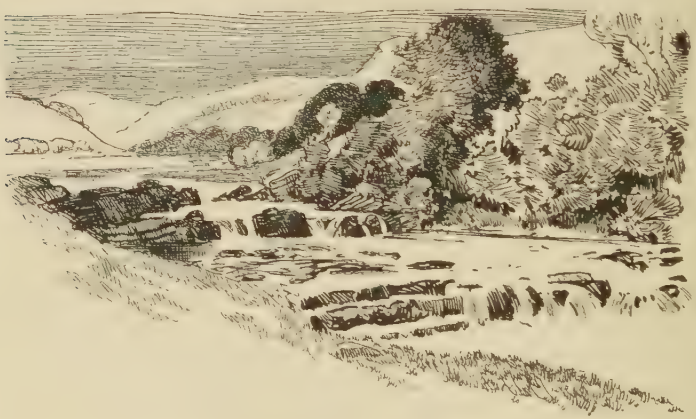
The heart of every riverside town is undoubtedly its bridge; and it is to the old grey arches which span the river at this point that I turn my steps before all else in Ilkley. On this fine summer morning the river flows on brown and cool. It has gained already the aspect of a mountain stream, broad and shallow, singing over a bed of many coloured gravel which flashes in the sunlight, and among which one sees from time to time the slow moving body of a blunt-nosed trout. A little wind stealing off the moors shakes the shadows on the bank, just where the scyamores dip their lower branches in the stream; and a little higher up a few boulders make a freshet, and send down a scum of bubbles discolouring the clear water. On the further bank there lie wide meadows of lush grass all bronzed with buttercups and sorrell, and shaded by high hedges where the hawthorn is in blossom yet. Further off again there are well-wooded hills stretching far into the blue haze which wraps both moors and valley in a mystery not yet scattered by the sun.

Here upon the bridge, and in all the meadows round, there is no haze, but exquisite clear morning, with a mountain freshness in the air. It is early still. There is no bustle in the town; and here by the riverside, where the stone coping of the bridge is but just warmed by the sun still lingering near the hilltops, there are no noises but those made by the river and the birds. Just such a morning it must have been when William Butterfield, long ago, surprised a tribe of fairies at the wells a short way up the hillside. He remembered noticing particularly, as he went very early at midsummer to set open

the door of the bath-house, how the birds sang so sweetly and cheerily and vociferously, making the valley echo with the music of their voices. He paid but little notice to this as he went up the hill; but afterwards it seemed to him that all nature must have been a-revelling with the sports of the small people, and that the sweet gaiety of the linnets and the thrushes had in it a note of joyousness which he never heard again.

As he drew near the wells he took out of his pocket the great iron key, and placed it in the lock; but there was something "canny" about it, and instead of the key lifting the lever, it only turned round and round. Then he tried to push the door open, but he had no sooner made it give a little than it was pushed to again from within. At last he set his shoulder to it, and forced it open with a bang. "Then, whirr, whirr! such a noise and sight! All over the water and dipping into it were a lot of creatures dressed in green from head to foot, none of them more than eighteen inches high, and making a chatter and a jabber thoroughly unintelligible. They seemed to be taking a bath, only they bathed with all their clothes on. Soon, however, one or two of them began to make off, bounding over the wall like squirrels. Finding they were all ready for decamping, and wanting to have a word with them, he shouted at the top of his voice, but could find nothing else to say than 'Hallo there!' Then away the whole tribe went, helter skelter, toppling and tumbling head over heels, and all the while making a noise not unlike a disturbed nest of young partridges. The sight was so unusual that he declared he either couldn't, or daren't, attempt to rush after them. . . . When the well had got quite clear of these strange beings, he ran to the door and looked to see where they had fled, but nothing was to be seen. He ran back into the bath to see if they had left anything behind, but there was nothing. The water lay still and clear just as he had left it the night before, so he gave up looking, and commenced his usual routine of preparing the baths."

Poor stolid William Butterfield, who saw the sight we have all dreamed of, yet could find nothing better to say than "Hallo there!" What was the cursed trick of fate which threw so rare a chance in the way of a fellow so poor of fancy and resource! Yet, to have looked even once across the barrier into Elfland must, one thinks, have changed a man's whole life; and surely sometimes, on warm summer nights, Butterfield must have heard the fairy laughter tinkling on the hillside when the stars hung large and golden over Rombald's moor!



The Valley of the Wharfe.

But he is dead long since, carried off, perhaps, to Elfland, and in the Ilkley of to-day, prosperous and full of ordinary lodging-houses, I can find no trace of fairies; which is just as well, for I am full of eagerness to move on up this valley, the scenery of which is growing beautiful beyond my expectations, and am content to leave the Roman relics and the ancient crosses, and even the fine moorlands and the crags which overhang the town, by which one may wander in the most glorious keen air all the way to Skipton.

As one follows on the road from Ilkley the moorland ridges break and scatter into fine hills, now sloping steep and dark from a bare summit, now marked by two or three lonely fir trees on the height. Lower down the woodlands are all swathed in heat. Even the fresh wind that sways the grass and sings over the dimpled river, filling all the valley with low music, cannot scatter the thin grey haze upon the slopes. Only in the valley bottom there is bright sunlight; and the air is full of the scent of wild flowers innumerable. Far in front of me Barden Fell and Simon's Seat lies like two vast blue clouds, shutting off this land of Eden from the working world.

At last, passing by the way to Skipton, I emerge upon a wooded corner by a group of pretty cottages; and passing through a gateway in the wall, I find myself descending a steep slope of grass and fern towards the river, beyond which rises a bare red cliff, breaking the line of woods, all green and brown and golden in the fine fresh sunlight. On my left stands Bolton Hall, and further on, scarce seen as yet, a grey arch peeping through the trees recalls the days when in this lovely valley there dwelt only monks. It is not at this hour of the day that those old ruins put on their chief beauty. I shall return and see them towards evening when the light has mellowed, and the glitter has gone out of it. So I go down towards the stepping stones round which the water sparkles so bright and clear, and, passing up the broken woodland paths, come at last to a copse of oak trees, where I pause to wonder at the exceeding beauty of the scene.

I cannot see the ruins, which are hidden by the thick growth of oaks and beeches. Below me is a steep green slope among the tree trunks, with here and there a stray belated bluebell, while over the fresh green twigs of the lower trees I see the brown river sparkling, and beyond that again another noble woodland, which rises from the water till it cuts the slope of Barden Fell lying in purple shadow and Simon's Seat all green and brown in the clear sunshine. A rushing wind sings

through the treetops from the moor; and following in its track a dense mass of shadows blows up the valley; the sky turns grey, the sparkles go out of the water, and the leaves shiver. Suddenly a little flash shoots out among the greenery, the oaks turn golden as the sun returns, and the long reach of brown water is once more so clear that even at this distance on the hillside I fancy I can see the blunt-nosed trout glancing here and there among the stones.

There is no turn in all the convolutions of this valley which does not stamp some beauty on the memory. When I rose

Bolton Abbey.

and wandered on again, I came to a spot where a smaller valley cuts down into the larger one, and a little stream, half dry, struggled on to meet the Wharfe beneath banks as high and steep as would have well become a torrent. But no king's raiment was ever stained so gorgeously as that high bank. For over its whole surface, up to the very skyline and far away beneath the shadow of the trees, there flowed a sea of colour. Wild campion, which the boys called ragged robin, the large star of the wild garlic, hyacinths, forget-me-not, speedwell, and a thousand more, were blooming there in strange profusion, so

that the whole slope positively glowed and burnt with the intensity of its royal colour.

A mile higher up the valley narrows, and the river bed is contracted further still by broad shoulders of jutting rock, grey and mossy. Through the narrow channel the river flows but slowly, the scum of bubbles drifting past the corners sulkily, giving out now and then a sucking noise which seems to come from a great depth. A few yards more and the black water swirls and writhes in a narrower channel still, while a little further up there is no black water at all, but only a white mass of foam, plunging like a living thing as it roars through a deep narrow cleft in the dark rock.

It is not difficult to leap across this roaring chasm to the ledges on the other side, but it is death to fail. This is the Strid, that famous passage of the Wharfe, out of which a white horse rises, vaporous and shadowy, in warning that another life is about to end in the whirlpools, where so many others have gone down since the Boy of Egremont missed his leap and fell there, dragged back by the hound which he was leading by a leash, and which faltered at the noise of the rushing torrent. Men say the story is not true; or, at least, that it was not sorrow for the poor lad's death which led Cecilia de Romille to grant Bolton to the monks. I care not what the truth may be, for, true or false, the old tale is as much a part of the beauties of this valley as the river or the rocks, and the student is not born who will divorce them. It is at least true that since the days of the Boy of Egremont lives almost countless have been lost in the black swirling water of the Strid; and there are not wanting people who can tell how they have seen the white steed rising from the depths, mysterious and shadowy, in the first stillness of the dawn, or when all the valley is filled with silver lights from the full moon rising over Barden Fell.

Above the Strid the woods close in around the river, and now and then the whistle of a solitary bird is heard above the rushing of the water, breaking and struggling over rapids, whose abrupt

descent is scarce less striking than the Strid. A little further on, the woods, which have been so dense and shadowy since I entered the grounds of Bolton Priory, melt away in fine, undulating lawns, the river courses under steeper slopes, and there, set beautifully on the side of the mountain, stands Barden Tower, an ancient building which is steeped in memories of the Cliffords.

Far back in the early chapters of this book, when I came in sight of the country lying round Londesborough beneath the low ranges of the wolds, I might have spoken of the shepherd

Barden Tower.

lord who, when he came into his own again, was Earl of Cumberland, and lord of all those territories which made the family of Clifford as great in the north-west of England as the Percies in the north-east. He was son of that Lord Clifford called the Butcher, who fell bravely on the day before the fight of Towton, in the cause of good King Henry, for whom the northern nobles risked so much, and whom they loved with a passion that long survived his capacity to serve them. But when Clifford fell, and the Yorkists triumphed next day upon the field of Towton, a hurricane of woe swept over the

north country, and Lady Clifford fearing justly that her two young sons would be taken and slain, sent them to a seaside town, whence the younger embarked for the Low Countries. But the elder son, the heir, was brought back by a feint, and placed in charge of a woman who had been nursery maid at Skipton Castle, and whom the child thus knew and loved. The woman was married to a shepherd at Londesborough, which estate was the property of Lady Clifford; and there the young lord lived as the child of those two peasants till the rumour began to spread that he was yet alive, and his mother, fearing that he would be discovered, transported him with his poor protectors to the Scottish border, where in the safe seclusion of that wild country the lad grew to manhood, with no knowledge of his parentage, nor any training other than that common among shepherds. He was near thirty when a monarch of the House of Lancaster once more gained the throne; and the House of Clifford was raised up from the dust to its ancient honours and possessions. But from that time the shepherd earl, unused to State and dignity, loved this small Tower of Barden, set among the woods and lonely fells, better than all his stately castles; and here he used to dwell, studying alchemy and science—if the tales be true—with the canons of Bolton, a scholar, a recluse, yet having in his veins so much of the noble blood of Clifford still undulled that he could shake off his solitary habits and play a man's part on the Field of Flodden, when the fear of Scotch invasion called out the tenantry of Craven, and all Wharfedale and Langstrothdale re-echoed almost for the last time in our history with the pomp of feudal warfare.

Well, he is gone; but I like to think that his shadow hangs about these hills as truly as that of the scholar gipsy flits about the Cherwell and the Cumnor Hills; and as I climb the steep side of Simon's Seat I find here and there a jutting slab of rock, where I may be sure he must have sat half buried in the scrub of cloudberries, whose red flowers star the hillside,

while here and there a stray purple berry anticipates the next month's harvest, and leaves a red stain on my careless hand. Far below over the rough slopes lie Bolton Woods, a thin line of forest in the valley depths, while out of it the green fields rise sharply, breaking into moor at last, ridge rising over ridge, shoulder falling behind shoulder, valley intersecting valley, far as the eye can wander through the foldings of the hills, till the sight loses itself in the dim haze of heat and can distinguish nothing certainly. High up on the opposite western slope lies

The Bridge at Barden.

a little tarn on a tableland among the hills, gleaming steel-grey like a mirror. One grey gable of Barden Tower projects out of the brown woods far below, but far as I can see there is no other habitation, nor any sign of man or living thing, save only a great hawk wheeling on steady wing above the moors—a prospect unchanged at any point since those old days when the shepherd lord used to dream out the long days upon this mountain side, drinking in the keen pure air, and watching idly the changes of the light among the sunny green bushes of the cloudberry and the darker masses of the heather.

I think it is scarce possible to avoid dreaming when one lies among these hills, so famous and so beautiful; and dreams would be worthless if they were not free to wander where they please; but I do sometimes regret that the great vision which came to Wordsworth in this valley regarding the tragedy of the Nortons had not issued from the gate of Horn. For, indeed, the true tale is piteous enough; and the ruin of a family so noble needed not the addition of miseries more bitter than those which were in truth incurred in the lost cause for which

The Valley of the Wharfe.

Yorkshire paid so heavily. There was rivalry between the Nortons and the Cliffords: and I suspect the fact that the former had joined the Rising of the North would of itself have been enough to incline the Lord of Skipton in the opposite direction. At any rate, though Clifford may have wavered, he stood loyal in the end, and his ancient house suffered no loss when so many others were ground down in the dust. His name must always have counted for more than that of Norton along the banks of Wharfe; for the true power of the latter

was, as I have said already, at Norton Conyers, close to Ripon, and that is doubtless why but few of the poor hinds in Wharfedale where hanged up when the time came to pay the penalty of failure, and in Richmondshire and all the villages round Ripon the poor labouring men dangled from the trees in groups of twenty and thirty at a time.

Richard Norton had been a man of note and mark, one of the Council of the North, and Governor of Norham Castle in Queen Mary's days. He had been out in the Pilgrimage of Grace, and I suppose that in all the north, where, as was truly said, "the ancient faith lay like lees in the bottom of men's hearts, and came to the top if the vessel was but ever so little stirred," there was none who clung more passionately than he to the institutions of the perishing society which the land was shaking off beneath his eyes. The old religion, the power of the great feudal houses,—they were slipping by like milestones left behind upon a road which one has travelled. One by one Norton saw himself borne past them; and he lost both wealth and home in a vain effort to turn back the march of time.

But he did not die. In those dark winter days when the rebels saw that everything was lost, and scattered in small parties up towards the Scottish border, hoping that among the moors of that wild land they might find safe shelter and in the end escape to Flanders, there came to Richard Norton one Robert Constable of Flamborough, his kinsman, and advised him urgently to take shelter with him. I know not how it happened that Norton distrusted this cousin of his own so far that even in the misery in which he lay he rejected the hand held out to him, and chose rather to take his chance in cold and wretchedness among the mountains. Perhaps he was warned by some knowledge of Constable's past life; for no man surely drops from an honourable past to the baseness of deliberately trapping noble gentlemen who put their trust in him. This was Constable's sole object. He was both a traitor and a spy; and earned an infamous success in the vile mission which he

had taken on himself, staining a very noble name with practices besides which the treachery of Murray of Broughton shines almost as the conduct of an upright gentleman.

Guided by some good angel Norton escaped this false adviser and fled to Flanders, whither his eldest son, that Francis of whom the poet tells a tale so dolorous, also fled. In fact, of all the eight sons whom the poet represents as perishing . . . . But surely it is a mean task for history to criticise a dream because it is not fact. In heaven's name let us take the gift without this scrutiny.

Well, the light is changing, and it is time to go. As I come down the steep fell the rich sunlight of late afternoon has turned all the lawns round Barden Tower golden, and the still woods behind are lit up with a rich illumination. The brown gravel in the river's bed glows deeper and ruddier than before ; and every sedge and bramble that is swayed and drowned by the flowing water catches a share of the warm light. This is the hour in which to see the priory ; and so I pass on through the long woodland paths above the river, past the Strid and the little islands and all the wide brown reaches of the river, while the air grows so lucent round the top of Simon's Seat that every stone and boulder on his rough flanks stands out clear cut with its own separate distinctness, till I come out at last upon a height to the north of the old ruin, and see below the river sweeping close in beneath the hill upon the right, so as to leave a wide and sunny meadow in the bow.

Over this broad lush sward of grass there are red cattle grazing up to the very margin of the river, and on the further side, just where a red bank breaks the line of sloping meadow, and a few hawthorn bushes still bear the remnants of their waning blossom, rises the grey shell of the priory, the five lancet windows of its choir framing glimpses of the distant hills which are far lovelier than the decorated tracery which they have lost. For Bolton, never a house of grandeur comparable to Fountains or Rievaulx, has been touched very

Bolton Abbey.

tenderly by time, which has added one of nature's ornaments in return for each of those fashioned by the hand of man which has been torn from her, setting a scented gillyflower in the niche whence some saint used to call the dalesmen to adoration, flinging down a screen of ivy, or a trail of wandering jew, across the wall which was once made rich by all the blazonry of Clifford; and opening through every shattered door and archway some new view, now of the brown rippling river stealing by the sunny pastures, now of the high woods steeped in the magic colours of the sunset, now of the great crags upon the fells stretching blue and clear far down the vale into a

The Castle, Skipton.

distance which seems infinite and boundless, till one's heart leaps with the very beauty of the scene, and one thinks that the loss of all which has perished here at Bolton was not a price too heavy for this ruin, glowing in the rich light, which has drunk in the overplus of beauty in the valley, and brought it out again so nobly that no man having looked on it can fail to bear it in his mind for ever.

It was a bright evening as I rode on towards Skipton, and the high downs which lie along the road stood up clear and golden against the pale sky. It was growing dusk as I came down the hill beside the castle wall, and paused before the two round

towers of the gateway, hesitating whether I should not wait for day before entering the old stronghold of the Cliffords. But there is something very gracious in the soft onset of the dusk in early summer; and the first golden sparkle of a star in the wan sky tempts me under the old archway full of shadows, and across the courtyard to the ancient quadrangle upon the left, where a tall tree growing in the midst gathers the coming darkness round itself, and makes a little rustling as the night wind steals downwards from the moors. The heavy mullioned windows are unlighted. There is no sound of service from the long hall or the kitchens, once so full of cooks and scullions, the withdrawing rooms are empty, the guardrooms absolutely silent; and neither lord nor lady paces through the courtyard. Yet if ever ghosts revisited the glimpses of the moon, how many a man would give his heart to see those which flit about this house of shadows. For there would come fair Rosamund, —she whom the cruel Queen Elinor tracked out in her labyrinth by a clue of wool—" Rosa Immunda " as the punning epitaph described her all too truly, yet a Queen of Hearts and Sovereign of Love unto this hour, made dear by a thousand stories of our childhood and the romance of seven centuries.

There, too, one would surely see the black-faced Clifford unhelmed and bleeding in the throat, as men saw him fall at Dintingdale, butcher perhaps, but a brave and hardy warrior such as any house might count among its ancestors with pride. Perhaps the shepherd lord would wander with the father whom he hardly knew, unless, indeed, his spirit chose to stray at moonlight over Barden Fell: but there certainly, since he chose to sleep his last sleep within Skipton church, would come George Clifford, Earl of Cumberland, that gallant admiral who wore the Queen's glove in his hat, and sailed his ship, the *Bonaventure*, into the press of the Armada fight, and bore the news to Tilbury that the Spaniards were scattered north up channel like a flock of sheep. " His fleet," says Fuller, " may be said to be bound for no other harbour but the Port of Honour,

though touching at the Port of Profit in passage thereunto." I know not which of those two ports the old Admiral loved best ; to Drake and Hawkins the one was as dear as the other, and why not? Doubtless both prompted him to the great voyage in the *Malice Scourge*, when he took San Juan in the Isle of Porto Rico, and had other gallant adventures, as we may read in Pinkerton. So there he goes with the royal favour in his hat, and a slight rolling gait, carrying still upon his lips the salt

Skipton Church.

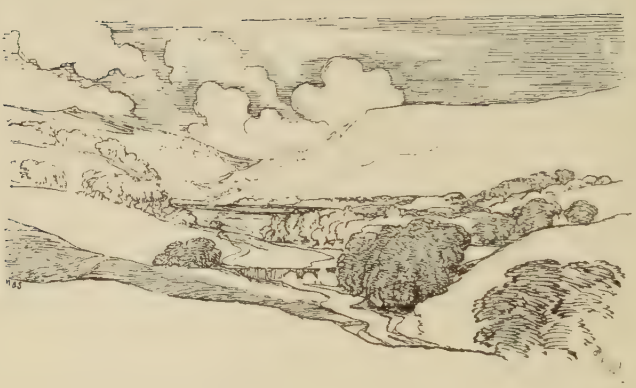
of many oceans, and in his ears the humming of the cordage and the creaking of the spars as the ship swung round upon another tack, and plunged forwards towards unknown lands. And, surely, in this house, which she beautified and restored, one would not sit among the falling shadows in the courtyard without seeing Lady Anne Clifford, Countess of Dorset, Pembroke and Montgomery, who gave so haughty a reply to that Minister of Charles II., who required her to return a certain

candidate for one of her many boroughs. "Sir," she wrote, "I have been dictated to by a king, I have been bullied by a usurper, but I will not submit to a subject. Your man shall not stand." Dear, noble lady; surely she must return to this her castle; and on some such summer night as this, when the stars hang warm and golden in the sky, pace once more along the terraces or the battlements which formed her proud inheritance!

But they have all passed on, like travellers who will never turn back to their last night's inn: and I stand here in the silence and the gathering darkness, half timorous, half looking for I know not what, till I hear the heavy footstep of the guide returning through the archway, and I follow him out into the castle yard again. A faint peal of organ music fills the air, followed by a low sound of chanting. There is practice in the church where the Cliffords lie; and as I pass out into the road again, and stand hesitating in the gateway, I am drawn across the churchyard by the jewelled lights within the stained glass windows, gleaming red and purple through the dusk: and pushing open the old, heavy door, I stand within the gloom of the last and final castle of the whole house of Clifford. At this west end of the great church there is almost utter darkness, the lights in the choir, where boys and organist are trying over chants and hymns, do but make an oasis in the desert of the dark. Gradually the vague outlines of the old recumbent statues near the altar grow distinct, and I can see the tomb of the shepherd Lord, and the stately monument of his son, whom a ghoulish antiquary, breaking open the silence of the vault beneath the altar, dared to unwrap from the graveclothes in which his body rested, and to glut his curiosity by gazing on the features of the dead. Surely, it is a miserable trick of destiny that the more a man achieves greatness while he lives, the more he is exposed to have his bones disturbed, and his last sleep broken, not by the hands of those who loved him, but by the prying touch of strangers, greedy to boast of having seen the very shape and outline of the body which was the home of the

great spirit long since fled. Let us thank God for His precious gift of obscurity, which will defend us from the jackals after death. And, with that pious thanksgiving lingering on my lips, I grope my way out into the summer night, and find the new moon rising over Rombald's moor, and a fresh breeze filling all the quiet streets with pure mountain air.

Kettlewell.



Valley of the Wharfe.

CHAPTER XVII

GORDALE AND INGLEBOROUGH

In Skipton in Craven
Is never a haven,
But many a day foul weather.

And as this jingle has been dinned into my ears by almost every man whom I have met in Yorkshire, I set it at the head of this new chapter, partly to disarm any reader who has been holding it ready to pelt me with, partly because I do not believe it to be true.

At any rate, it was a cloudless morning when I rode out of Skipton on the road to Gordale; and as that highway is a thought uninteresting, I shall use my leisure to set down, before dropping wholly the subject of the Wharfe valley, a legendary tale belonging to the higher regions of the river, which may serve for an example of the wild and merry ways of the inhabitants in those old days "when virtue was a country maid," and lusty

monks from Fountains had their cronies among the peasantry of the fells where the Abbey flocks were grazed in countless numbers.

There was a shoemaker, one Ralph Calvert, a cheery dog with a melodious throat, and a store of old gay ballads which made him popular both in Thorpe, the village where he lived, and at Fountains, to which his duty called him periodically. From Thorpe to Fountains is a long journey, and I blame no man for thinking that it excuses some refreshment. But even

Thursfield.

a merry cobbler, with a bag full of shoes, would have done better not to slumber by the wayside after lunch; for they who do so are sure to dream of the devil, which is exactly what Ralph Calvert did.

He dreamt that the fiend caught him unawares, and holding him aloft with one hand, untied with the other the neck of the bag which he carried on his back, and thrust the poor shoemaker in. He was in the very act of tying the strings again when Calvert woke up with a shriek, and found himself lying quite

alone upon the dusty grass which bordered the wayside. He got up nervously and looked about for the devil, and then walked on a bit and peeped round the corner of the hedge to see if he was there, but could find not even a hoof mark in the dust; and so gradually he recovered his spirits and persuaded himself that it was nothing but a dream, and walked on singing for his own encouragement till he came in sight of Fountains Tower rising out of the deep woods, and spent a merry evening with the porter over a yard of beef and a bowl of foaming wassail.

Next day he started homewards by the Pately Road without a care. But as he went the further from the Abbey, he thought the more of the devil: and at last he thought so much of him that when he got to Pately Bridge he stopped and had a glass or two before climbing up that worst of hills which leads up out of Nidderdale again. Thus fortified, he trudged on bravely over the high moors: and when he came at last to a swollen river, took off his boots and went through it gaily. He was sitting down on the other side to put on his shoes and stockings, singing the while,—

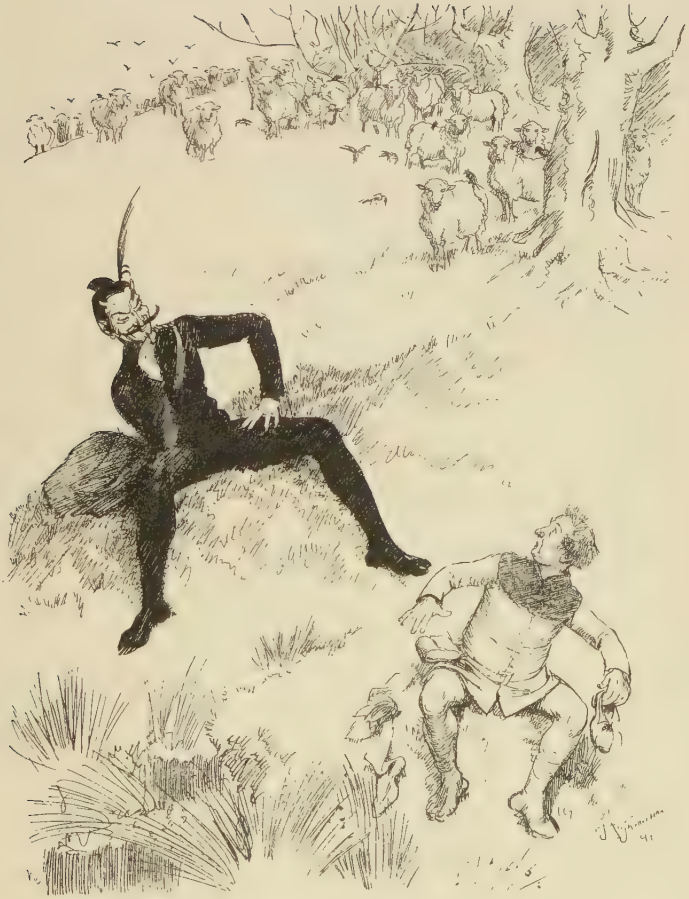
> "As he was riding along the highway
> Old Nick came unto him, and thus he did say,
> Sing link-a-down, heigh-down, ho-down, derry."

When a voice at his shoulder trolled out lustily—

> Tol lol derol, derol dol, dol dol derry."

Ralph turned round like a man shot, and there at his elbow stood Nick himself, horns and hoofs in plain evidence, and bag slung over his shoulder, just as Ralph had seen him in his dream, but inclined apparently to do no evil, since he did but inquire how far it was to Grassington.

Now I cannot tell whether Ralph's head was still humming with the Pately ale, or whether he thought there could not be much harm in a fellow who was so ready to bear a hand in a



[*To face page* 340.

"*Old Nick came unto him.*"

chorus. But the fact is that he answered cheerily, "Too far to go wi'out a bite," and brought out an eel pie and a bottle of wine, which his gossip at the Abbey had packed into his wallet. Old Nick's eyes glistened –may every one of us be as well provided when we meet him on the moors!—he sat down gladly, he trolled a catch, and Ralph responded to it, he told a merry tale of two monks in an orchard, and the cobbler capped it with the very latest scandal about the Prior: the eel pie vanished, the wine washed it down, –never were two cronies half so jolly, and the sheep came to the brow of the hill and gazed down in wonder, having never heard in all their fleecy lives so vast a sound of laughter in this lonely place. Ralph found it true that Nick is a gentleman, for no painful subjects were alluded to, and his bag lay unheeded on the grass. At last the devil rose to go, courteous to the last: and Ralph, too, staggered to his feet, hiccoughing out, "If tha be 't devil or not, tha bees a merry chap: but if tha be, bigg us a brigg over this river." The devil did not hesitate. "In three days it shall be there, gossip," he said: and catching up his bag, made two strides to the summit of the hill. The fuddled shoemaker watched him go, but lost him in a black cloud which whirled suddenly across the hilltop, and burst somewhere out of sight, sending down a torrent of foaming water breast high in the already swollen river.

So Ralph went home, shaking his head wisely. But in three days the bridge was there, and stands there to this hour, as I can testify, having stood on it and mused on this veracious story,— for the main facts of which, having given but little personal attention to matters diabolical, I am indebted to Mr. Edmund Bogg, who walked "a thousand miles in Wharfedale," and who, therefore, ought to know all about it.

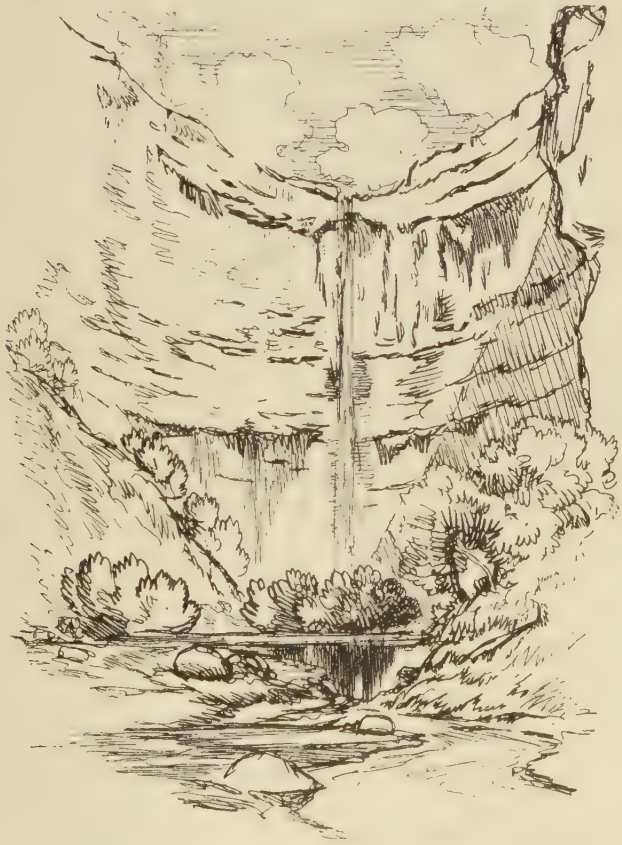
But I have left Wharfedale far behind, and am lost among the country lanes upon the slopes which drop to Airedale, last of the great Yorkshire rivers which has claims upon my interest, and that less by virtue of its own beauty than of the grandeur

of the hills reached by following its valley. Already I am mounting on the lower ridges of the water parting : and at last the road, which has been heading straight towards the hills, turns off and runs beside them, dropping fast into a circus of green fells, dotted here and there with little farms. The Gordale cliffs, hidden by a jutting down, betray themselves by their craggy summits towering over the high pastures ; and one follows up the course of a little stream underneath green slopes and low walls of limestone till a sudden turn lays open the whole depth of the ravine.

On the right a blackened cliff, strangely furrowed, and so far scooped out at its base that the crags upon its summit overhang, sweeps round in a lofty semicircle, while on the left, dropping straight and sheer as if levelled by a plummet, a whiter cliff of the same immense height thrusts its shoulder out across the curve. Out of the cleft between the two, a stream falls in three heavy leaps ; while if one penetrates the gorge a little further one sees that at a greater height the brook makes a wilder plunge into the chasm, striking in its fall against a ledge of rock which scatters half its volume into drifting spray. Thus the whole abyss is filled with the sound of rushing waters, beating against the blackened cliffs. A raven flaps heavily across the gorge, croaking harshly. The rowans growing on the upper ledges of the precipice are dry and wasted, and the desolation of the cliff is in striking contrast with the fresh colours of the turf, short and verdant and elastic as is usual in limestone countries.

This precipice, so lofty and so sheer, is but one face of the great Craven fault,—a dislocation of the strata which has left huge cliffs at many different points among these high downs,—there is another not less grand a mile away across the moor at Malham Cove,—and seems to have possessed a singular faculty of terrifying poets. Gray indeed, who wandered through this country a century ago, or more, was so much impressed that he stayed here no less than a quarter of an hour, and notes,

quaintly enough, that he thought his trouble well repaid ; while Wordsworth plunged boldly into the unknown in search of a

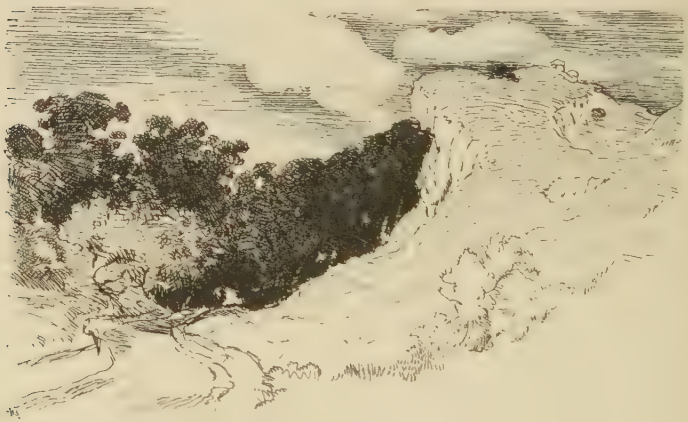


Malham Cove.

comparison, and said it was "terrific as the lair where the young lions couch." For my part the couching of young lions recalls

nothing but the gardens of the Zoo: and I do not find in myself that ready sense of awe which overwhelmed the poets.

Now, in the long convolutions of these Craven dales there are many scenes as wild and beautiful as Gordale: and if a man will spend the summer day in wandering from there to Malham, which is scarce a mile away over the short turf, and thence, regaining the main road, pass on to Settle, he will find such scenery as will delight his memory for many a day after the dull town life has closed round him once again, and the rattle



Near Settle.

of the hansoms has driven out of hearing the music of the streams and the cheep of the moor-tits flitting quickly from stone to stone. But, as for me, my face is set for Clapham by the shortest road, for my time in Yorkshire is but short, and there are sights in that high region which I cannot leave unseen. And so I pass on quickly under the great downs, threading the country which used to be so sorely harried by the Scots. I know not why these raiding enemies of England descended so often upon Craven, which was so many miles

from the Scottish border, unless it was that the flocks browsing on the great fells formed an easier booty than the crops in more fertile regions of the north. But whatever their motive, the Scots came repeatedly and drove off the Craven villagers in flocks—if one may trust the brutal details given by Richard of Hexham ; though why should one set down the tale of a monkish chronicler as weighed and sifted fact? "They first massacred, says the pious Richard, "in the most barbarous manner possible children and kindred in the sight of their

Settle.

relatives, masters in sight of their servants, and servants in the sight of their masters, and husbands before the eyes of their wives ; and then, horrible to relate, they carried off like so much booty the noble matrons and chaste virgins, together with other women. These naked, fettered, herded together, by whips and thongs they drove before them, goading them with their spears and other weapons. . . Afterwards, when they were distributed along with the other booty, a few from motives of pity restored some of them to liberty at the church of St. Mary at Carlisle ; but the Picts and many others carried off those

who fell to their share to their own country. And, finally, these brutal men, when tired of abusing these poor wretches like unto animals, made them their slaves, or sold them for cattle to other barbarians." Such were the tales which ran from mouth to mouth in the monasteries, where idle men, straining their own ears constantly for the tramp of Scottish hoofs, lent easy credence to the tales of frightened peasants, and the yarns told in their cups by the troopers of some baron who had sought the abbot's hospitality. From such tainted

The Market Place, Settle.

sources doubtless came the facts which the good Richard set down; yet the story serves us, whether true or false, as a proof of that strange horror with which the border fighting was conducted, and which gave it at certain epochs something of the character of a holy war.

But all these woes are forgotten long ago; and England holds no quieter or more peaceful country than that which lies in the shadow of the mountains which are now gathering round me. This long time I have seen the crest of Ingleborough.

Settle lies behind me some miles back : and at last I enter the small village of Clapham, which nestles at the foot of the "muckle flat-topped hill" which caught some tender spot in the soft heart of Jeanie Deans as she trudged southwards on that journey over which races yet unknown will weep when

Catterick Force, Settle.

English is a dead tongue and "The Heart of Midlothian" a classic and a schoolbook for all who wish to master it.

There is not much to say about the bright clean village which straggles up the hill on both sides the beck. There is a bridge half way up the street, from which one can look down on a thread of water dripping among great mossy boulders, or

over it towards the small low church and the hill rising steep behind it. But it is not the village nor the church that brings strangers to this place. It is the far-famed cave; that winding cleft which pierces through the very heart of the great mountain, and in which there lie miracles of loveliness wrought in silence and in darkness by the water slowly dropping through unnumbered centuries.

At the head of the village a gate gives entrance to the grounds of Ingleborough Hall, through which one is permitted to climb the first slopes of the mountain up a dell as lovely and as little spoilt by art as any to be found in Yorkshire. The seasons loiter in the keen air of these highlands, and there is still a flush of wild hyacinths on one bank, and here and there a stray primrose nestling by the brown stream; and so one passes on through pleasant woods, while the lawns give place continually to outcropping scars of rock, till at last one pauses by a crag which gapes a little from the ground, as if some one had pulled out a mammoth brick from the wall of limestone, and left a low entrance leading into darkness. From a shelf within the iron gateway which bars the ingress of too curious boys, the guide takes down rough wooden candlesticks, each holding two vile dips, and serves them out to all the party, for in traversing the narrow windings of the cavern one must guard one's steps too carefully to rely on other people's light. So armed, he leads us out of the cheerful day round a corner of the limestone which shuts off all light instantly, save the flickering of the candles, which, to eyes dazed by the sudden blackness, do but serve to make the darkness vaster. The impression of illimitable space is heightened by little gleams and red reflections from the water which lies in pools upon the floor of the cavern; but as I tread cautiously along the firm and easy path my sight adjusts itself, and one by one, falling as it seems out of the thick dark, the walls and roof of the cavern grow distinct before me; rough wet wrinkled slabs of brown and blackened stone, worn into strange irregularities

which, in this dim and wandering light, seem to slip and slide together in a wild confusion. But here and there among these knobs and boulders, found more thickly as one plunges deeper into the convolution of the chasm, are shapes of delicate and cunning workmanship chased and fretted like miracles of art, strewn profusely up and down the ledges and the floor of the cave, now like delicately woven lace thrown down by some careless beauty, now dropping in long filaments from shelf to shelf like the tresses of a woman's hair, and again recalling those great spongy corals which the fisher in the Indian ocean sees wavering far down beneath the clear blue water.

These are the incrustations of the limestone water dripping from the roof through more centuries than any one can measure, and as I go on silently and cautiously, crossing now a footbridge thrown over a deep pool, now stumbling among boulders all wet and slimy with the pervading moisture, I begin to see that the same agency has covered the roof with long twisted pendants, glistening at some times almost snowy white, and others having more the colour of a brown moorland water. From time to time the cave expands into a wide and lofty chamber, where our united candles in the centre make a dull glow in strange contrast with the blackness lurking a few feet away, and once or twice the water, whose trickle whispers and echoes through the whole of the abyss, takes a deep choking sound as if struggling out of reservoirs and chasms which lie unsuspected close at hand. Indeed, there is a spot far on into the hill, rarely shown to travellers, where the water ends in a black lake which can only be explored by swimming, and which is fed by one knows not what streams lost upon the mountain side, and swallowed up in unfathomable depths.

It is a strange and rare experience thus to be carried into the bowels of the earth, stumbling and creeping upon hands and knees so vast a distance underneath the sunny slopes where the curlews are calling over the brown moor; but I sighed for the bright day, and the first gleam of sunlight striking on the

rough walls of the entrance pleased me more a hundredfold than any of the wonders I had seen in the realm of shadows. Ah, how sweet the soft northern sunlight was as it fell through the ash trees on the short turf and sparkled on the stream and old stone walls, mossy and stained with the droppings and the storms of a hundred autumns. From the cave I turned up the hill. The woodland grew scant, only larches and a few scattered hawthorn bushes cast their shadows on the grass. On my right the steep mossy turf is warm and sunny, with grey boulders jutting out all down the hill; and a little further on the path leads through a noble gorge, between two lofty broken cliffs of limestone, topped by a few gaunt firs. The morning sun shines straight into the ravine. The shadows of the bushes lie across the grey face of the rock. The sunlight brings out every kind of tender colour, brown and yellow, lavender and delicate shades of purple, while further on a gnarled hawthorn of enormous age throws a black cool shadow all across the sheer face of the cliff.

It is an absolutely solitary spot. My guide turned back and left me at the entrance of the cavern; and here in Trow Ghyll there is neither sight nor sound of any living creature, while even the slightly traced path which guides me through the depth of the ravine is strewn so thickly with old unbroken branches and the droppings of last autumn leaves, as to make it clear that neither men nor sheep pass this way save at long intervals and in the summer weather which is coming. Far up above me a curlew wheels and cries in the still air; and led on by the shrieking of the bird, I climb out quickly on to the brown moor where the three peaks of the great ridge of Ingleborough seem close at hand, rocky on the highest summit, where there is an old entrenchment, set in old days as a watch tower on this lofty ground whence the slopes and valleys of a hundred hills are laid open to the sentinel.

Over the long brown grass which clogs the undulating surface of the moor I trudge on for some half-mile or more, trending

upwards as straight as the nature of the ground permits, till there strikes suddenly upon my ear the last sound I had expected on this high grassy hill—the sound of falling water. There was something curiously startling in the low whispering splash which stole across the silence of the mountain. I paused and looked around. As far as I could see the moor lay unbroken, swelling and falling into knolls and valley, but offering no cliff over which a cataract could fall. I could not even see a beck; yet the air was charged with the rustle of water scattered

Ingleborough from near Settle.

in its fall over some great depth, and the light wind which stole down from the peak blew the murmur round me with such varying intensity that I could not tell whether it was near or distant. At last, wandering to and fro in some doubt whether I was not the victim of a trick of fancy, I struck the hollow course of a small stream, which flowed deep-set below the moor over a bed strewn with boulders. I followed down the slope. The boulders grew larger and more frequent, and at last the hurrying little thread of water was lost beneath blocks and slabs

HACKNEY

of limestone too large for it to pass. The beck seemed to burrow underground; but the noise of falling water was now loud and clear, and climbing over the great slabs I came suddenly in sight of a vast black chasm gaping dark and unfathomable in the very track of the rivulet, which, drawn by some horrible attraction to the maw of this abyss, gurgles sparkling out from beneath the limestone slabs again, and hurls itself down the pit.

Awe is an emotion which I rarely associate with scenery; yet there was something which excited it in the aspect of this vast rent in the mountain one had thought so solid, in this immense shaft driven into the very bowels of the hill, and the loss of the pretty beck which bubbled on so confidently only to be gulped in such impenetrable depths where never any beam of sunlight can pursue it, nor moorland wind strew its waters with fresh scents. Across the black jaw of the chasm there drifts perpetually a dim white smoke, the scattered spray of the broken stream, impinging far below upon some shelf of rock, whence it drips down into those subterranean recesses out of which come the waters that whisper so stealthily in the darkness of Ingleborough Cave.

Gaping Ghyll, the country people call this spot; and there are few who would care to explore its sheer black depths, or discover what are the things which it has gaped for during all the years or centuries since first it opened on the slopes of the mountain. Yet I am told that not many years ago a Frenchman swung himself down with ropes, and, what is more, came up again alive. I turn away with a shudder from the steaming chasm, and breast the hill again with a sense of pleasure in the bright sun and the keen wind blowing from the old deserted camp, which I did not feel before I saw the hidden cavities laid bare before me. There are great wonders in the caverns of the earth, but the surface is all that I ask for myself; and as I mount higher on the slopes, accompanied by a pair of curlews which wheel round and round me with their

hoarse despairing cry, my eye is caught perpetually by some gleaming whiteness on the distant mountains, some flashing patch of snowy whiteness which reflects the sun. At this season there is no snow on any of the hills, and at such a distance no mass of flowers would be perceptible. The mystery is solved when, after ploughing through wet bogs upon the summit of the mountain, I come out in view of the long green dale upon the further side. For there stretched out upon the slope by which I must descend are vast flat tables of gleaming limestone, bleached into vivid whiteness by the storms of untold centuries, under the hot sun which beats upon this slope of Ingleborough. These immense tablelands of barren stone are absolutely dazzling to the eye, great stony deserts unrelieved by any tuft of grass or heather, and ending abruptly upon sweet pasture starred with flowers.

It is a wide grassy dale into which one looks down from the northern slope of the mountain. The noble hill country which lay behind me as I climbed up the other slope is entirely hidden by the flat tableland which I have crossed; but before me lies the vast bulk of Whernside, a ridge rather than a mountain, having no great beauty in its outline, while at the foot lie a few farms and houses, making up the scattered village of Chapel-le-Dale, dear to the hearts of those who know their Southey as they should. It is a long climb down into the valley, and no scenery comparable to Trow Ghyll beguiles the way. But at last the level ground is reached, and as it is not of any striking beauty, I turn the more readily to the little inn. What occurred there is nobody's business but my own; but when I emerged again, nearly an hour later, I was more charitable to the attractions of this valley full of high fresh pastures, and strolled across the fields towards Weathercote Cave with all the kindly feeling of indulgence towards mere works of nature which distinguishes the man who has but just done lunching after a long mountain walk. "Obviously," said I, as I slouched over a stile, "there

can be nothing on these even slopes of any remarkable interest; but since one may not walk to Ingleton so soon, let us see this cave of which the people say so much."

In this patronising mood I found my guide, and followed him into a small plantation, out of which came the sharp sound of falling water. Passing through the trees, I paused upon the brink of a torn, ragged chasm of depth sufficient to conceal the tower of the loftiest parish church in England. A vast cavernous abyss, with sheer sides of blackened limestone, out of which, at a point some twenty feet below the surface of the ground, there bursts a full and copious stream, making one leap into a dark pool at the bottom. The noise of its fall, caught and thrown back by the rough walls, reverberates around the cave, and re-echoes in a steady roar such as one marvels to hear from a stream so small, and which makes it easy to believe that when the volume of the water is swollen by the burst of storm-clouds on the hills, or the melting of the snows at the first touch of spring, the sound becomes of overwhelming power. At such times, so my guide assures me, it has occasionally happened that the rush of waters down the bed of the small stream is so enormous that the outlet at the bottom of the cave cannot carry it off as fast as it pours in. Then the brown foamy water, lashed perpetually by the fury of the fall, rises steadily in the chasm, creeping up from ledge to ledge, drowning first one rock and then another, till the sheer depth is like one vast caldron filled with whirling water, seething and foaming under the shadow of the black rocks.

Such a sight could be watched by no man without some sense of terror; but on this bright summer day there is nothing in the aspect of the chasm save a rather gloomy grandeur. It is a place of vast brown shadows, cool and dark, having a certain beauty even in the shapes of its rock masses; and the gloomy archway, under which a staircase is cut in the face of the abyss, conducts one to the very foot of the lofty fall. But of these things, of the bushes tipped with sunlight, or the trails of ivy

hanging down the face of the rock, one sees but little and one remembers less. It is the silvery column of the water which draws one's eyes and thoughts perpetually. Even in the lowest depths of the chasm it sparkles into diamonds, bringing its own light with it—I know not how; and the abiding impression on my mind is of that stately pillar moving and flashing like a living thing into the dark depths of the abyss.

Sobered and humbled out of all my patronising mood I took the road to Ingleton, an uninteresting four miles of the hottest road conceivable; so that when at length I came out over the craggy slopes above the little town, and saw the valley opening below me on my right, with its cool brown shades of coppice, under which the river brawled along secure from the scorching sun, I could not help turning aside and climbing over the rough, slaty shingle of the paths till I found a bank of turf at the foot of a grey rock, very deep and sheer, where I could lie in shade among the cloudberries, and look up at Ingleborough turning purple in the evening light, or down upon the river splashing over pretty falls and rapids far below; and there I lay until the hills grew clear and the mountain lost its colour, and a cool breeze began to blow out of the west, and here and there a star climbed up from behind the ridges and glittered among the crags. The town was growing quiet as I rode through. The excursionists were gathered on the station platform, and as I rode on down the valley towards Clapham I heard them singing in the distance as they waited for the train at a junction on the moor,—very clear and pure the voices sounded as they floated down the wind across the heather and the gorse.

There is something in the aspect of this still evening which turns my thoughts far back into the past, and I remember that southward across the hills lies a country not so very far away to which I had intended to make a pious pilgrimage in memory of that saint, that poor, persecuted king to whom the Yorkshire people gave their hearts many years after he had laid down his troubles and left his throne in peace to his chief enemy. I

speak of Henry of Windsor, the only king whom Yorkshire people deemed a saint, though he was not duly canonised. But the common people who had fought and suffered in his cause cared little about that,—yea, and their children and their children's children loved him equally, of whom the chronicler said that "His face was beautiful, in the which continually was resident the bountie of minde wherwith he was inwardly endowed. He did abhorre of his awne nature all the vices as well of the body as the soule, and from his verie infancie he was of honest conversation and pure integrity, no knower of evil, and a keper of all goodness." It is in the wills and testaments of poor men that one must seek now for the traces of love which these qualities excited. King Henry had been dead well-nigh fifty years when John Watton wrote down in his last testament that his body was to be buried "in the chapel of Terrington before King Herry." And ten years after that there died at York a butcher named John Cowper, whose desire it was "that Margaret my wyff, or another, ride or goo pilgramege for me, that is to say, to our Lady of Burgh, to our Lady of Kerlell, to Kyng Harry of Wyndesour . . ." and to other spots hallowed by the memory of those whom he trusted might yet aid his soul. Poor, honest, faithful people! And for every one who cherished King Henry in their hearts so many years after his death, how many score were there who would have died for him when he was yet alive? It was over there among the hills at Bolton by Bolland that he lay in hiding for many months after the battle of Hexham, waiting secretly in hope that his queen would yet knit up his cause again among the northern barons, who did in truth pour out their blood like water for his house, so that at length upon the field of Towton half the chivalry of northern England fell under the banner of Lancaster.

It was one of the great family of Pudsay who sheltered his king at Bolton Hall. The story is not doubtful. The loyalty of the Pudsays was conspicuous even in those days of passionate

devotion and of enmity as fierce. Full sixty years after the king's death Ambrose Pudsay wrote: "In witness whereof this my last will and testament, I dide write it with my owne hande at Bolton Haull, in a chamer that goode Kyng Henry the Sexte lay in, and therfor it is called his chamer to this present daye." Doubtless he conceived that this the last and most solemn action of his life, gained a special sanctity from the fact that he performed it in the chamber hallowed by

Bridge by Bolton in Bolland.

the prayers and sufferings of the fugitive king; and it may even be that having written out the document he made use of some one among the prayers addressed to the king which were current in his family. The book containing them is still extant, and was described by Canon Raine. It is a small octavo, bound in strong oaken boards, and covered with tarnished purple velvet. The contents are in manuscript of the fifteenth century, and consist of some of the services of the Roman Catholic Church, with genealogical notices of the family

of Pudsay. But on the fly-leaf is the following prayer, thus headed: "Oratio beati Henrici sexti, regis Angliae et Franciae, &c., hic vir dissipiens (*sic*) mundum et terras, triumphans, divitias celo condidit corde, ore et manu. Ora pro nobis, beate Henrice, ut digni efficiamur." Then follows the prayer itself, in these terms: "Deus qui unigenitum Filium tuum, Dominum nostrum Jhesum Christum famulo tuo regi nostro Henrico corpore et anima glorificatum demonstrare voluisti, praesta, quaesumus, ut ejus meritis et precibus ad eternam ejusdem Domini nostri Jhesu Christi visionem pertingere mereamur; per dominum nostrum Jhesum Christum, Filium tuum, qui tecum vivit, &c., per omnia saecula saeculorum. Amen."

Sawley Abbey.

Chapeltown.

CHAPTER XVIII

KIRKSTALL, WAKEFIELD, AND THE APPROACH TO SHEFFIELD

I DO not know how far a traveller in Yorkshire may be expected to rise superior to the traditions of the people; but the point is of little consequence, for I can lay no claim to what Boswell would have called "fortitude of character" and Dr. Johnson "stark insensibility." I make no difficulty about admitting that I am afraid of the padfoot, and that is why I did not ride on through the dark last night towards Leeds. It may not be well known to all who read this book what the padfoot is. He is different altogether from a footpad, and much more terrifying to encounter. Nobody sees him clearly, because they meet him only on dark nights. But sometimes on a lonely road the solitary wayfarer hears a light footfall padding by his side, now running on a few steps in advance and now retreating to his rear; while suddenly out of the dense gloom there comes a

shriek so loud and curdling, so wild and lost in the abandonment of its despair, that those who have heard it ringing at their shoulders can compare it to no other sound they ever heard, unless indeed they have been followed by the barking of the Gabriel hounds borne through the air on the storms of some winter night.

There appears to be a loose notion in the minds of many worthy people at the present day that superstitions such as that which I have just mentioned are apt to be eradicated by the elevating and intellectual influence of mines and collieries, those

Kildwick.

well-known modes of diffusing purity of thought and manners among a benighted peasantry, clinging still to the half-forgotten creeds of their pagan ancestry. Dr. Whitaker, that excellent though peevish antiquary, was contemptuous of this doctrine, going indeed so far as to declare that the discovery of a lead mine or the introduction of machinery was the greatest curse that could befall a village or a country side. This view he held lustily against all comers ; and indeed those people who hold that piles of slag and ashes lead on the people to new heights of intellect, and volumes of black smoke purify their

A Black Country Road.

minds of folly, might do well to stroll round the mining districts of the West Riding, and find out for themselves how rigidly the faith in witches is held still.

For my part, shrinking as I do from taking either side in so dangerous a dispute, I cannot but think that dwelling in a country such as this would be more apt to breed superstition in the choicest product of a Sunday school than to root it out of any one. For even in summer, when the dusk gathers and the hills grow shadowy, there is something rarely striking to the dullest mind in the aspect of the furnace fires gleaming out one by one from the recesses of the valley. You will see a vast dark hillside thrusting its great ridge across a quarter of the heaven. Suddenly a little tongue of flame quivers up amid the blackness, and another follows as if responding to a signal, and a third succeeds, till a long, long line of rosy flames gleams along the hill like torches borne by men in some great midnight ceremony. And while one wonders at the beauty of these leaping flames, there comes a sudden rush of smoke and light high up from some tall chimney, streaming half across the sky with volumes of pale green and rose colour, scintillating and eddying with a thousand glowing changes and suffusions : and sinks again as suddenly as it rose up, leaving the night sky dark and the stars large and golden.

I say it is no wonder that those who live constantly among such sights as this dream in their hearts of witches' Sabbaths. And as the more nearly one approaches Leeds the less there is of beauty in the land, I will set down here the tale of a witch of Halifax, as it is recorded for the confusion of the doubting in the learned pages of the Folklore Society. The witch was called Betty, and she elected not infrequently to assume the form of a cat, notwithstanding which disguise her identity was no secret to some of those who dwelt in the locality, and one old man undertook to catch her and draw blood from her, that being, as is well known, the best way to render any witch innocuous. He armed himself accordingly with a large fork ;

Bradford from the Leeds Road.

and, following the prescribed procedure for those who desire to commune with a witch, he set a cake to bake before the fire of the house which Auld Betty frequented, and sat for some time watching it without result. Suddenly, looking up from the fire, he saw a large black cat sitting quietly beside him, engaged in washing its face. The hour had come: and the old man grasped his fork firmly. "Cake burns," cried the cat. "Turn it, then," he answered firmly, but the cat, instead of doing as he bade it, said again, "Cake burns." The old man made the same rejoinder, and the cat again proffered the same remark. This went on for some several rounds, till the witchfinder, maddened by the monotony of the conversation, forgot the caution he had received to name no holy name in presence of the witch, and cursed her soundly in the name of the Almighty. Instantly the cat flew up the chimney with a squall, and the old man, seeing his prey escape him, plunged after her, jabbing at her retreating body with his fork. There was a dreadful scuffle in the chimney, and the witchfinder got woefully scratched; but he drew blood at last; and the next day the witch was ill in bed, suffering from incised wounds upon her unholy person, while the innocent victim of her malice was left unmolested from that hour.

"For my own part," said Tristram Shandy on a notable occasion, "for my own part, as heaven is my judge, and to which I shall ever make my last appeal, I know no more of Calais than I do this moment of Grand Cairo." Notwithstanding which misfortune of ignorance he went straightway and described it,—and that, although he had but the moment before protested that he thought it "very much amiss that a man could not go quietly through a town and let it alone, when it does not meddle with him, but that he must be turning about and drawing his pen at every kennel he crosses over, merely, o' my conscience, for the sake of drawing it!" Now, with one small reservation, I am as ignorant of Leeds as Tristram was of Calais, and I shall show the better judgment

In the Black Country, Leeds.

by adhering to his principle rather than his practice, and making no effort to describe it. Indeed, of all that wilderness of bricks and mortar I have no more than two clear memories, those, namely, of its ruined abbey and its most atrocious cobbles. On the subject of the cobbles I desire to say only that any cyclist who can ride out of Leeds upon the Wakefield road without forfeiting his title to salvation, has my hearty admiration for his patience.

But the abbey is another matter. Some three miles out of smoky Leeds one finds it in the shallow valley of the Aire, a shattered ruin, full of dignity and rigid beauty, speaking oddly of long past days of solitude and meditation here, where the clank of engines and the thud of anvils creep daily nearer to the roofless ruin. It is easy to see how pretty this wide and open valley must have been, and how sweetly the Aire once wandered through the buttercup meadows which lie on every side of Kirkstall; poor, pretty river, how changed and soiled! Just below the abbey it still sparkles, because it falls over a weir, and the sun will dance even on the inkiest stream when it is broken into foam. Elsewhere I do not care to look at it, but turn away to the fine Norman arches of the abbey, to its church with shallow choir, and transepts fairly perfect yet; to the cloister where doubtless upon summer mornings long ago the old monk Serlo sat, who had seen the first monks of Fountains, and known their sufferings and their endurance, and told the tale years afterwards to Hugh of Kirkstall, that chronicler from whom I have already quoted it. What would not one give to see the wealth and grandeur of the abbey as it stood when the old slow voice of Serlo, prosing through the quiet hours, was the only sound that broke the silence. The sacred uses of the building are all gone; but the wealth, if one may trust the popular tradition, lies hidden still in some chamber of the earth, guarded by those who will defend it till the rightful owner comes again, though he linger for many a century yet. "'Th' man was threshing in th' abba lair," so

Kirkstall Abbey.

runs the tale, "and at nooning a' thocht he'd strecken his back, an when he gat out he saw a hoile under th' abba, and he crept in and he fun' an entry and he went doon it and at bottom there was a great houseplace. There were a gert fire blazing on t' hartstone, an in ae corner were tied up a fine black horse. And when it seed him it whinnied. An behind the horse was a gert black oak kist, and at top o't kist a gert black cock, an cock crawed. Th' man said to hissel, 'Brass in t' kist, I'll hae sum on't.' An as he went up to't t' horse whinnied higher an higher, an cock crawed louder an louder; an when he laid his hand on t' kist t' horse made such a din, an t' cock crawed and flapped his wings an summat fetched him such a flap on t' side of his head as felled him flat, and he knawed nowt more till he came ti hissel, an he was lying on t' common in t' lair, an never could he find the hoile under the abba again."

So there the monks' treasure remains to this hour. For I do not doubt it was they who tethered this whinnying horse beneath the earth, and set the crowing cock to give warning of the ravisher's approach. Doubtless the chest is full of jewelled croziers and golden crucifixes, such as would make the most moral man among us call loudly for the melting pot, could he only find them. Who doubts that the keen wit of the monks must have scored some points against the commissioners of dissolution? If only one could get a cart . . . and go by night . . . for the laws of treasure trove are the unjustest laws in all the world! . . . There, let me get away from Kirkstall before all my morals ooze out into some hole in the ground, and I have none left to carry me to Wakefield, where, heaven knows, a man needs all his piety to carry him over the cobbles.

Wakefield is but seven miles of road from Leeds, a sorry road, a scandalous and bumpy road, a road of pitfalls and deep ruts; and when at last the town is reached, which was made illustrious by its association with the Pinder who fought

Wakefield.

with Robin Hood—dear Pinder of our childhood, I salute thee!—I have neither patience nor leisure to search through the hilly streets for characteristics of the citizens, but with one half-hour spent in the noble church—surely not far inferior to Rotherham in beauty!—I pass on down the hill until I come to an inky river flowing sluggishly beneath an ancient bridge, whose builders never thought to see it so defiled with dust and soil of collieries. On it stands the little rebuilt chantry, perishing and worn, which still recalls the memory of that great Duke of York, who fell fighting rashly in this very neighbourhood. It may or may not be a true tradition which links the memory of the great duke with this lovely little wayside chantry, and indeed chapels upon bridges had other objects than to commemorate the dead. But events so tragic as those which happened here sweep men's minds clear of other recollections; and since it is the great defeat and slaughter of the followers of the White Rose which remains the dominating interest in Wakefield, I make no effort to inquire further, but cross the bridge and go on up the hill for some half-mile or more, till, diverging to the right, I find the mound of Sandal Castle still surrounded by its old dry moat, but never a sign of the great buildings which almost equalled it with the rival Lancastrian stronghold at Pontefract.

Hither travelling "by small jorneis" came from London the great protector of the realm, Richard, Duke of York, bound northwards in opposition to the fiery queen, Margaret of Anjou, who was seeking to burst the bonds in which the lords who followed York held her poor weak husband, and set him upon an untrammelled throne again. It was on December 2nd that the Duke left London for the north, where the flames and ashes of English turbulence and insurrection were most lightly stirred, and where the chief power of Lancaster always lay. The Earl of March was to follow him with a larger host; two younger sons, the Earls of Salisbury and Rutland, were riding with their father. So all the company rode into Sandal

Castle upon Christmas Eve; and day by day through all the festive holiday the friends and tenantry of York were marshalled and assembled within and without the walls, till a sturdy host of some five thousand men was gathered under the Protector's banner; and the duke waited only for the coming of his son with the main body to attempt some forward movement.

Now, if York had not been audacious to the verge of rashness, he would not have selected Sandal Castle, though it was

The Chapel on the Bridge, Wakefield.

his own, in which to marshal his adherents and to wait for reinforcements, for by entering the north at all he was driving a wedge into a hostile territory. North of Trent the Red Rose flourished everywhere, and if the White strayed into any garden it stood a good chance of being torn up by the roots. Queen Margaret lay at York, not thirty miles away, "Havyng in her companye," says Hall, "the Prince, her sonne, the Dukes of Excestre and Somerset, the Erle of Devonshire, the Lorde Clifford, the Lord Rosse, and in effect

all the lordes of the northe parte with eightene thousande men, or, as some write, twentie and two thousande." What kind of policy was it that made York lie waiting for his strength within thirty miles of such a mighty enemy? Did he dream that his son's host was so near that he could afford to scout the queen when she took the step which it was certain she would take, and marched with her army to Wakefield, and out upon the level ground before the castle bade him defiance, offering battle in his very sight? Yet all might still have gone well with York had he been content to endure a siege, and wait the coming of his son. That was the advice of his proved and trusty friend, Sir Davy Hall; but when he heard it, York cried in a great fury, "A Davy, Davy, hast thou loved me so long, and now wouldest have me dishonoured? Thou never sawest me kepe fortres when I was Regent in Normandie, when the Dolphin himself with his puissance came to besiege me, but like a man and not like a bird included in a cage I issued and fought with mine enemies, to their losse ever—I thanke God—and to my honour. . . . And sureley my mind is rather to die with honour than to live with shame, for of honour cometh fame, and of dishonour riseth infamy. . . . Therefore avance my banner, in the name of God and Sainct George, for surely I will fight with them, though I should fight alone."

So the castle gates were thrown open, and with the words of this noble speech, instinct and glowing with all the pride of ancient chivalry, still ringing in their ears, York and all his company closed their visors, set in rest their lances, and rode down the hill into another world, carrying with them their unsoiled escutcheons, and, I think, the love of posterity. For men's hearts go out to bravery, not judgment, and the wisest of us may go down the hill to the spot where Richard struck his last stout blow on the casques of a crowd of enemies, and stand before the recent monument with all the will in the world to call the battle folly, and yet find the

kindly tender feelings rising from the bottom of his heart, and his lips shaping no other words than "of honour cometh fame, and of dishonour riseth infamy. . . . Therefore avance my banner." Good headlong knight, rest there in peace! for England, which has such need of wise heads, is served nobly also by those who can only teach their fellows how to die.

"While this battaill was in fighting," says Hall—for I may not omit to tell how Clifford gained his surname of the Butcher. —"a preste called Sir Robert Aspall, chapelain and schoolmaster to the yong Erle of Rutland, ii. sonne to the Duke of Yorke, scarce of the age of xii. yeres, a faire gentleman and a maydenlike person, percevying that flight was more saveguard than tarrying both for him and his master, secretly conveyed the Erle out of that field by the Lord Clifforde's band towards the town; but or he could enter into a house he was by the sayde Lord Clifforde espied, followed and taken, and by reson of his apparell demaunded what he was. The yong gentleman dismaied had not a word to speake, but kneled on his knees imploring mercy and desyring grace, both with holding up his hands and making dolorous countenance, for his speache was gone for feare. Save him, sayd his chappelain, for he is a Prince's sonne, and, peradventure, may do you good hereafter. With that word the Lord Clifforde marked him, and sayde, by God's blode, thy father slew mine and so wil I do the and all thy kyn; and with that worde stacke the Erle to the heart with his dagger, and bade his chappelain bere the Erle's mother and brother word what he had done."

That story, which for full three centuries no man has read without a shudder, is not wholly credited by the best opinion of to-day. I know not what the truth may be: but to me it seems that the mere fact that such a tale could be believed, lifts the curtain on a ferocity of party passions such as no other strife in all our stormy history has called out. Did we but know the bloody details of those wars, we should have a tale of such mingled terror and nobility as would outmatch any record

now lasting in the world. But, thank God, there was no diarist ; and the grass grew no quicker on the graves of butchered citizens and knights than oblivion about the cruel details of their fate spread through the kingdom. In one short generation all the widows had gone to join their husbands, the servants had found other masters, the children had forgotten the tales told them at their nurses' knee. The world was changing, and the chivalry was gone And so the old passion died out very quickly, and York and Lancaster worked side by side in the creation of the greater England which rose upon their fathers' graves.

It is not here as with the field of Towton, where a man can look down still upon a country little changed since the hosts were marshalled under the Dun Bull upon the slopes by pretty Saxton. From the mound of Sandal Castle I look out over a country of wide valleys and low swelling hills, obscured upon the north where the prospect is black and dim, for Wakefield belches smoke enough to hide the sunlight. So the lusty strength of modern Yorkshire crops out upon the scene where the vigour of old days spent itself in blood ; and the clank of spindles rings as loud as that of harness along the river's bank. Peace and industry are born together in the land, and the wildest brain does not dream of other civil wars in England.

Do but see how I linger as I draw near my exit from this great county, how I catch at this feature and at that of the noble scenes which go drifting past me as I dally with my route ! I go into the Castle Inn, and see the landlord's picture of the old perfect castle in its grandeur, and listen to his gossip, rambling on from it to the famous naturalist, old Waterton, who used to live at Walton Hall, a bare mile away ; and all the rest of the grand country life which is being slowly driven out of the pleasant valleys of South Yorkshire by the advancing collieries and heaps of slag. The day grew old and I still loitered on the hill above Wakefield ; till at last as I went on by the pretty

road to Barnsley, rising and falling among well-wooded hills, the moon was rising in a golden mist, blackbirds were piping in the woods, and a great cloud of rooks were rising up into the cool grey sky. There are still so many parks within this region, and the trees are even now so fine, that it is easy to believe in the reality of that great Sherwood forest which must have run out in this direction, though with uncertain borders and some intermissions, as far as Kirkless Priory, where, as all men know, Robin Hood met his death and lies buried to this hour, one of the few heroes of the people to whom there is

Kirkless Hall.

attributed no uneasy slumber, no hearkening for the sound of any signal which shall call him up to roam the forest again as he did when the world was young. It may be that the simple fancy of the ballad writers saw that the restless slumbers they assigned to Arthur, a king broken by the storms of policy, betrayed by the treachery of wife and friend, were inappropriate to Robin, whose heart was in the deep forest glades and who endured no troubles but the weather and the pursuit of enemies, to which all the forest life was also subject. So that when his joyous life had ended, he slept as sweetly as any deer in all wide

Sherwood, or as the woodwele which woke him by its singing, until it fell at last among the dead leaves in some lonely corner of the forest.

As I lounge up these pretty hills under the grey evening, the rooks stream in increasing numbers on their way homewards through the sky, and a great sound of cawing floats downwards from the untrodden country where they sail so steadily; while I go on as reluctantly as a child called to come out of its pleasure ground because the dark is near, and the time for playing is all over. It is with the heart of a child that I have gone round Yorkshire, catching at whatever pleased my idle fancy: and now it is with the lips of a child that I find myself repeating, without any consciousness of what it is, the old burden, "Down, a down, a down," and then the words "Went o'er yon bank of broom," until at last the whole stanza leaps into my memory:—

When Robin Hood and Little John,
Down, a down, a down,
Went o'er yon bank of broom,
Said Robin Hood to Little John
"We have shot for many a pound,
Hey, down, a down, a down."

And then it goes on, sadly enough,

"But I am not able to shoot any more,
My arrows will not flee."

It was westward from this spot, not many miles away, beneath the reddening sky, that Robin sought for succour in his mortal weakness, and found only treachery: for in a room which one may see still, the Prioress of Kirkless blooded him while one drop of blood would run.

There he did bleed all the livelong day
Until the next day at noon.

He then bethought him of a casement door
Thinking for to be gone.
He was so weak, he could not leap,
Nor could he gat him down.

He then bethought him of his bugle horn
Which hung low down to his knee.
He set his horn unto his mouth
And blew out weak blasts three.

Then Little John when hearing him,
As he sat under the tree,
"I fear my master is near dead
He blows so wearily."

How that weary blast ringing faintly over the woodland out of Kirkless Tower calls down all the empty centuries and knocks at our hearts for sympathy! That is true romance, pure gold coined by the sweetest fancy of some forgotten singer,—as any child will testify by the eager eyes and the parted lips with which it hears the story, listening for the hundredth time to the tramp of Little John's hasty feet as he ran to Kirkless, and burst the locks to reach his master who was sick and needed him, and to his rage when he heard the treachery of the Prioress, and asked only leave to burn the priory in revenge.

"Now nay, now nay," quoth Robin Hood,
"That boon I'll not grant thee.
I never hurt woman in all my life
Nor man in woman's companye.

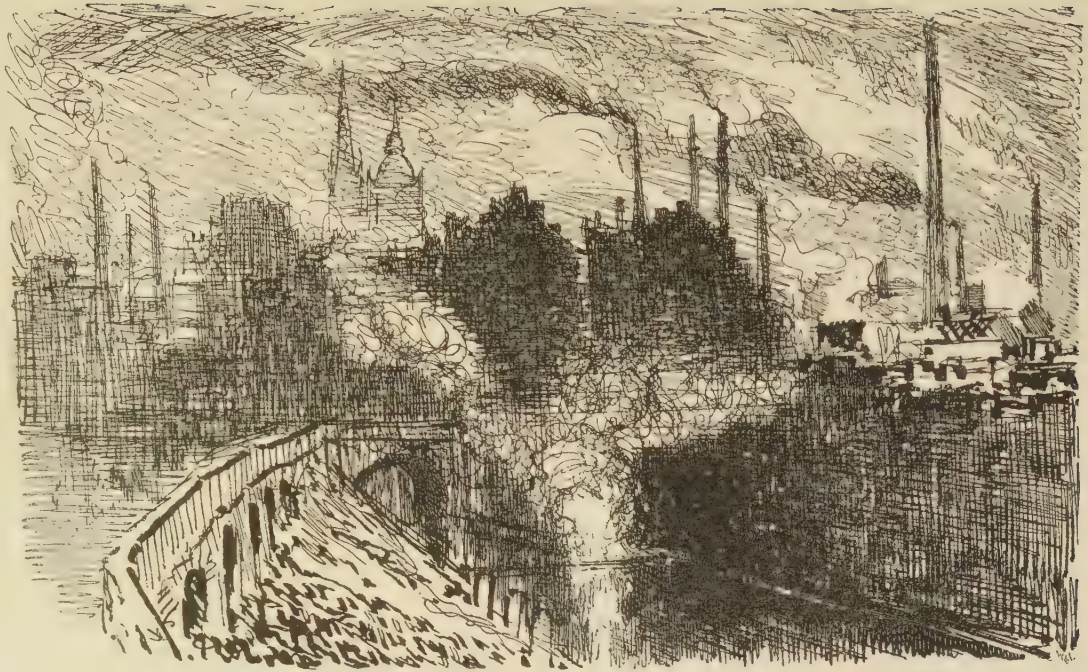
"I never hurt fair maid in all my time
Nor at my end shall it be.
But give me my bent bow in my hand
And a broad arrow I'll let flee.
And where this arrow is taken up
There shall my grave digged be.

"Lay me a green sod under my head
And another at my feet,
And lay my bent bow by my side
Which was my music sweet,
And make my grave of gravel and grene
Which is most right and mete.

"Let me have length and breadth enough
With a green sod under my head,
That they may say when I am dead
Here lies bold Robin Hood."

So the arrow sang through the warm air of the summer afternoon, and dropped upon the sweet turf a short bowshot from the grey stone casement where the gentlest of all outlaws sat watching it with God knows what yearning for the wild-rose thickets, and the open glades and the bank of broom, round which the bees went humming in the sunlight: and not long afterwards Little John laid his tired master down upon the bed, and went out into the forest by himself, and digged the grave at the spot where the arrow fell, and lined it with green sods; and there lies Robin to this hour, having length and breadth as much as even he could wish, for the measure of both is as wide as the hearts of all the people in the land, and as boundless as the love of all the children born in merry England. God a' mercy of his sins; and lay no greater ones to the charge of any soul among us!

I have no appetite for further sights in Yorkshire, though there is more than one noble park within this region that I had desired to see. But the night is falling, slowly, as it does in summer, yet marching steadily among the woods: and now and then I see a furnace fire flare out among the hills, warning me that the land I am approaching is no longer full of shadows, that it has forgotten old times, and is prosperous and new, and for the most part grimy. I have passed by Barnsley, its steep streets mercifully shrouded by the dusk. I have run on past the turn which, had it been bright day, might have led me off upon the right through Wortley, that fine park and pretty model village, out to Wharncliffe Chase, and the deep woodland gorges of the Don. My road is piled up on both sides with dusky heaps of ash and slag, and strange glowing galleries and chimneys belching fire break out upon the skyline on every side. Already a lurid glow in front of me marks



Sheffield.

the proximity of Sheffield. It is the last of Yorkshire. Moors and valleys swept by storm winds, rivers casting over the whole land a network of low, rushing music, becks splashing softly from a height into cool beds of moss and fern, castles, monasteries, tales of knighthood and of tragedy, all are done, all lie far behind me ; and now the night wind, which sighs at this moment over Beverley, or brings down sweet odours from the hills into Fountains Vale, blows towards me charged with fumes of sulphur and the acrid odours of the forges.

It is, I say again, for me the last of Yorkshire, that very noble county which has contributed so large a portion of the strength and sorrows of the North ; and as I run on slowly through the dark towards the town of glowing furnaces, I find myself wondering how many out of all that motley host of visitors who come to Yorkshire year by year have given their hearts to her, or, indeed, to England, with any sort of understanding love. I know all that can be told me of the soldiers and the sailors who will die for England, of the administrators toiling day and night in some lonely outpost of the Empire, sustained and fortified by the desire that the joints of the imperial structure may be some whit the stronger, the justice done some whit the purer and more true, for all the tragedy of their unrecognised lives and soon forgotten deaths. That is no doubt the greater part of love for mother country,—but is it all ? A woman may be proud that her lover will work and die for her ; but will she be content if he never comes and sits beside her, and takes her hand in his ? If he stay away from her because other women whom he meets in Rome or Naples are lovelier, will not she feel that her very pride is turned to bitterness, and that the love which is not personal is, indeed, no love at all ?

As the world shrinks, and other countries are brought nearer to us, I suppose it is inevitable that love of country should cease in some degree to be a passion, and subside into a principle. But if any man will spend a month in wandering round Yorkshire, with ears awake to all the great voices of the

past, and eyes open to the beauty which is so peculiarly English he will find the passion roused again, real and living; and thenceforth the rivers and the glaciers of other lands will be to him no more than the parks and palaces of other men, compared with the white gateway and the low verandah which speaks to him of home.

Bradford

INDEX

A

Adwick le Street, 27
Ainstie, the, 45
Aldborough, 292, 305
Aske, Robert, 21, 22
Askrigg, 236
Atkinson, Canon, *quoted*, 139
Aysgarth Falls, 239, 241

B

Bainbridge, 233, 235
Balliol, family of, 178
Barker, John, Coachman, 4
Barnard Castle, 174, 17 *et seq.*
Barnesdale, 29
Bawtry, 4, 6, 7
Bawtry, the saddler of, 7
Benedictine Monks, 62
Beverley, 68 *et seq.*
Blackburne, Lieut., 37, 39
Bogles, 114
Bolton Castle, 242 *et seq.*
Bolton Priory, 323
Boroughbridge, 305
Bowes, Sir George, 189
Bridlington, 81
Buccleuch, the Bauld, 251
Buckingham, Duke of, 101
Butter-tubs Pass, 222
Byland Abbey, 108, 268

C

Calvert, Ralph, 339
Camden on Monasteries, 60
Catterick, 159
Chaloner, Sir T., 151
Chapel le Dale, 353
Charms, 120
Cistercian order of Monks, 11, 62, 103, 281
Clapham, 347
Cleveland, 112
Clifford, Lady Anne, 335
Clifford, the butcher, 41, 326, 334, 373
Clifford, George, Earl of Cumberland, 334
Clifford, Rosamond, 334
Coaching, 158
Council of the North, 85
Coverham Abbey, 267
Coxwold, 111

D

Dent, 184, 227
Doncaster, 19 *et seq.*

E

Easby Abbey, 204
Eggleston Abbey, 171
Espec, Baron, 101, 102

F

Fairfax, family of, 48 *et seq.*
Fairies, 321
Filey, 90, 92
Flamborough, 84 *et seq.*
Forest laws, 31
Fountains Abbey, 65, 277 *et seq.*
Friars, 35, 213
Fuller, *quoted*, 1

G

Gaping Ghyll, 352
Gascoigne, Chief Justice, 245
Gaston de Foix, 122
Gordale, 342
Graham, Sir Richard, legend of, 300

Greta river, 150
Guisborough, 150

H

Hackfall, 274
Hand of Glory, 181
Hardraw Force, 229
Haslewood, 46
Hawes, 231
Helmsley, 101
High Force, 181
Highwaymen, 5, 7, 26
Holderness, 67, 78 *et seq.*
Hood, Robin, 29
Hornsea, 79
Hovingham, 100
Hull, 76

I

Ilkley, 320
Ingleborough, 348 *et seq.*
Ingleton, 355
Irwin, Lady Anne, *quoted*, 4

J

Jenkins, 160
Jervaux Abbey, 268

K

King Arthur, 199
King Edward II., 106
King Edward IV., 40 *et seq.*
King Henry VI., prayers to, 357
King Richard II., 35, 243, 244
King Richard III., 262
Kinmont Willie, 253
Kirkstall Abbey, 366
Knaresborough, 308

L

Langdale, Sir Marmaduke, 23
Lastingham, 114
Leeds, 364
Leyburn, 256, 258
Lilburn Col., 9
Lyke wake dirge, 116

M

Malham, 343
Markenfield, 190, 295
Mary Queen of Scots, 87, 189, 247
Middleham Castle, 260
Middleton in Teesdale, 180
Minstrels of Beverley, 69
Morice Col., 37, 39
Mortham Tower, 163

N

Nappa Hall, 236
Neville family, 261
Nevison, highwayman, 26
Northumberland Earl, 190
Norton family, 190, 249, 299, 329
Nun Appleton, 50

O

Otley, 313
Outlaws, 29, 30, 32, 122

P

Padfoot, the 358
Paulden, Capt. W., 23, 37
Paul Jones, 87
Pedlars lost on moors, 224
Peg Powler, 170
Pickering, 121
Pilgrimage of Grace, 20, 21, 270
Pilgrims, 3, 63
Piracy, 84, 135
Pontefract Castle, 22, 33 *et seq.*
Potter Thompson, 201

Q

Quakers, 219

R

Rainsborough, General 23, 25
Ravenspur, 78
Reeth, 215
Reresby, family of, 15
Richmond, 196 *et seq.*
Rievaux Abbey, 103 *et seq.*
Ripon, 276, 298
Rising of the North, 189, 297
Robin Hood, 30, 124, 136, 283, 375
Robin Hood's Well, 29
Roche Abbey, 10
Rokeby family of, 165
Romans in the North, 56 *et seq.*, 306
Runswick, 14

S

Saints
St. Cedd, 114
St. Cuthbert, 72, 183, 258, 302
St. Hilda, 134
St. John of Beverley, 72, 75
St. Robert of Knaresborough, 311

Saint Leonard's Cross, 15, 16
Saint Mary's Abbey, York, 60 *et seq.*
Sanctuaries, 72, 183, 227, 258
Sandal Castle, 374
Saxton, 43
Scarborough 93, 94 *et seq.*
Scots in Northern England, 55
Scottish Raids, 107, 254, 345
Scrope, Archbishop, death of, 245
Scrope, family, 206, 243 *et seq.*
Sedbergh, Adam, Abbot of Jervaux 27
Shepherd, Lord The, 326
Sherwood Forest, 29
Shipton, Agatha, 313
Shipton, Ursula (Mother S.), 314
Simmer water, 232
Skipton, 334
Slingsby, Sir Charles, 305
Slingsley, 100
Smuggling, 80, 86
Sow, the felon, 192
Stainmore, 181, 183
Staithes, 147
Sterne, Lawrence, 111
Stridd, the, 325
Swale, river 200 *et seq.*

T

Tadcaster, 48
Tanfield, 275
Tees river, 172, 181 *et seq.*
Thistlewood, Arthur, 8
Thrybergh, 14
Thwaites, Isabel, 50
Tickhill, 9
Topcliffe, 300
Towton Moor, battle of, 41 *et seq.*
Trow Ghyll, 350
Turstan, Archbishop, 63 *et seq.*, 103

V

Vavasour, family of, 46–47

W

Wakefield, 370
Walpole the Jesuit, 85
Warwick the Kingmaker, 41
Weathercote Cave, 353
Wensley, 234, 255
Wensleydale, 234 *et seq.*
Whitley, 130 *et seq.*
Wimund, Bishop, 109
Witchcraft, 168
Witches, 138, 139, 140, 362
Wolds, the, 81–82

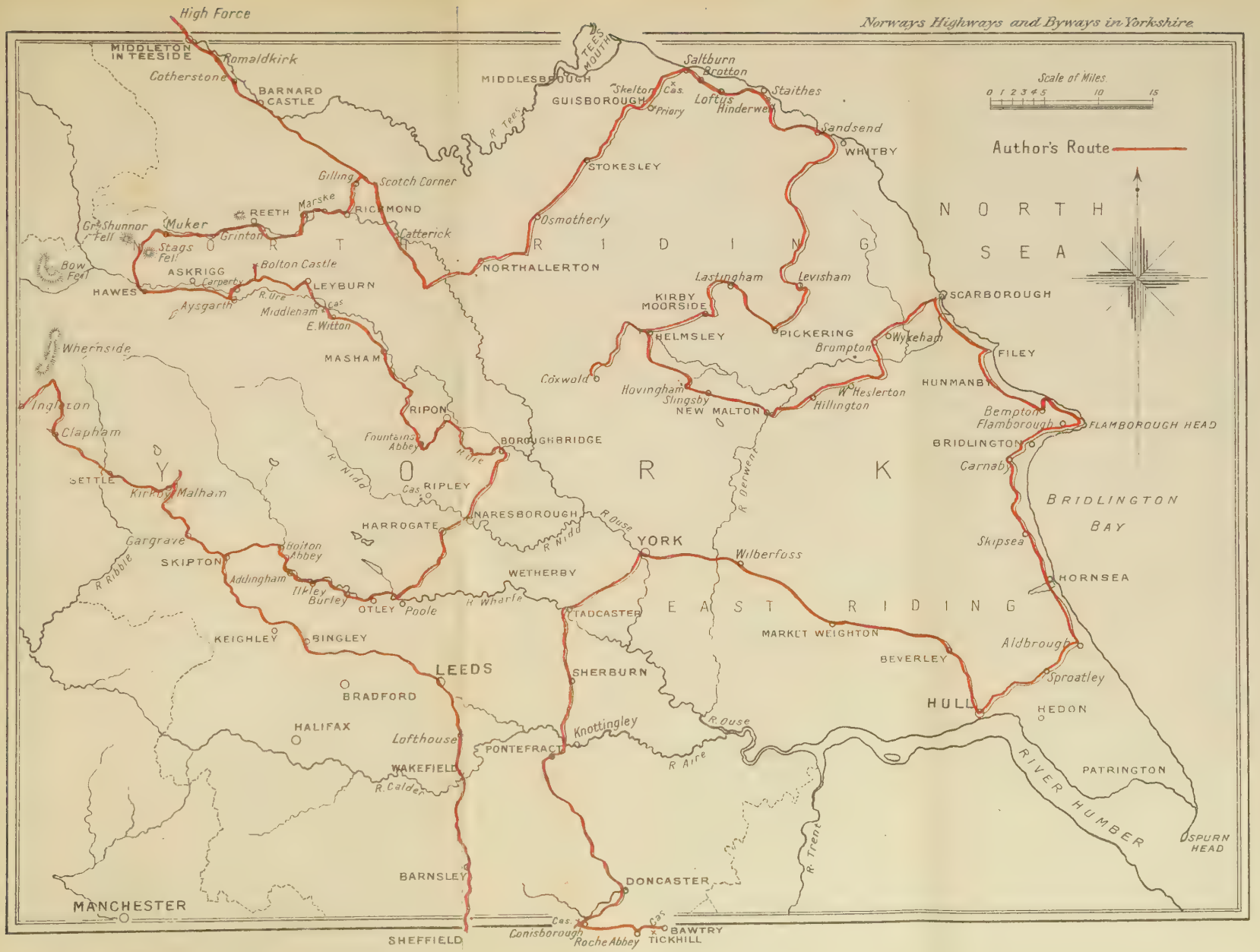
Y

York and Ainstie Hunt, Accident to, 304
York, city of, 51 *et seq.*
York Minster, 65
York, Richard, Duke of, 370
Yorkshire, coat of arms, (so-called), 72

THE END

HACKNEY PUBLIC LIBRARIES

RICHARD CLAY AND SONS, LIMITED, LONDON AND BUNGAY


High Force
MIDDLETON IN TEESDALE
Romaldkirk
Cotherstone
BARNARD CASTLE
MIDDLESBROUGH
TEES MOUTH
Saltburn
Brotton
Skelton Cas.
GUISBOROUGH
Priory
Loftus
Staithes
Hinderwell
Sandsend
WHITBY
Scale of Miles
0 1 2 3 4 5 10 15
Author's Route
R. Tees
STOKESLEY
Gilling
Scotch Corner
RICHMOND
Marske
REETH
Gr. Shunnor Fell
Muker
Stags Fell
Grinton
Catterick
Osmotherly
NORTH RIDING
NORTHALLERTON
Bow Fell
ASKRIGG
Carperby
Bolton Castle
HAWES
R. Ure
LEYBURN
Aysgarth
Middleham Cas.
E. Witton
Lastingham
Levisham
KIRBY MOORSIDE
SCARBOROUGH
NORTH SEA
HELMSLEY
PICKERING
Brompton
Wykeham
FILEY
Whernside
MASHAM
Coxwold
Hovingham
Slingsby
NEW MALTON
W. Heslerton
Hillington
HUNMANBY
Ingleton
RIPON
Bempton
Flamborough
FLAMBOROUGH HEAD
Clapham
Fountains Abbey
R. Nidd
BOROUGHBRIDGE
BRIDLINGTON
Carnaby
SETTLE
Kirkby Malham
Cas. RIPLEY
R. Derwent
YORK
BRIDLINGTON BAY
HARROGATE
KNARESBOROUGH
R. Ouse
Gargrave
Bolton Abbey
SKIPTON
R. Ribble
Addingham
Ilkley
Burley
OTLEY
Poole
R. Wharfe
WETHERBY
Wilberfoss
Skipsea
HORNSEA
TADCASTER
EAST RIDING
MARKET WEIGHTON
Aldbrough
BEVERLEY
Sproatley
KEIGHLEY
BINGLEY
LEEDS
SHERBURN
BRADFORD
HULL
HEDON
HALIFAX
Lofthouse
Knottingley
R. Ouse
PONTEFRACT
R. Aire
WAKEFIELD
R. Calder
PATRINGTON
RIVER HUMBER
R. Trent
SPURN HEAD
BARNSLEY
DONCASTER
MANCHESTER
Cas.
Conisborough
Roche Abbey
Cas.
BAWTRY
TICKHILL
SHEFFIELD